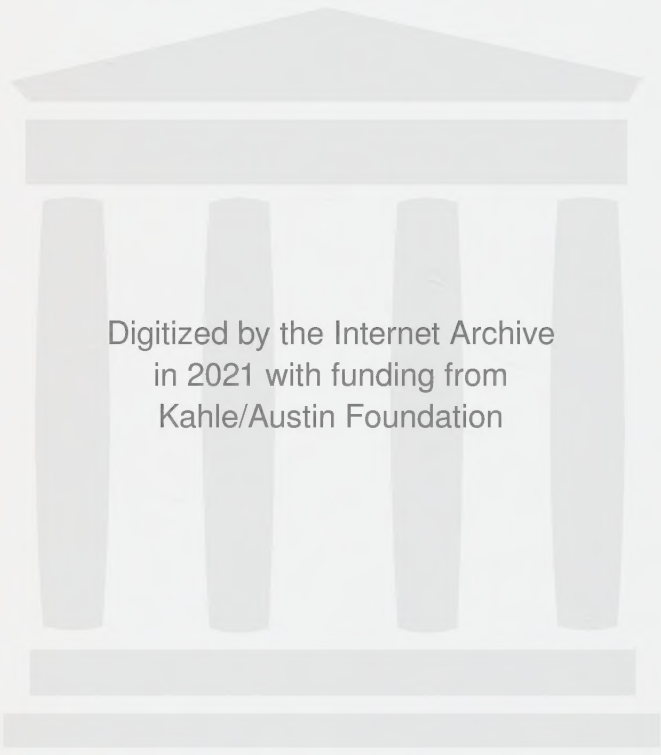


Is There a God?

**Who is This Jesus of Nazareth
Man or Myth?**

**Arthur
Stanley
Carbno**



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2021 with funding from
Kahle/Austin Foundation

RCIA 2012

Is There a God?
Who is this Jesus of Nazareth
Man or Myth?

All rights reserved: Except for critical reviews or education presentations no portion of this book may be reproduced without the consent of Arthur S. Carbo.

Isbn: 978-0-9880225-0-8 April 28, 2012:

Printed and bound by:
Style-Craft Printing Ltd.
Calgary, Alberta.

First edition printed June 2012:

God Bless
you always
Sinnera

Is There A God?
Who Is This Jesus Christ of Nazareth
Man or Myth?

About The Author:

This is the second book written by Arthur. The first one he co-authored with his sister Jeanette, together they collected information on the history of their family and the history of the small Saskatchewan town they grew up in. This information they compiled and presented it in a book entitled "The Charcoal Makers". Arthur has a religious background, he was baptized into the Lutheran Church, married in a United Church by a United Church Minister and was confirmed into the Catholic faith. Arthur and his wife Susan reside in Calgary, Alberta and are parishioners at Saint Albert the Great Church.

Is There A God?
Who is This Jesus of Nazareth
Man or Myth?

The Cover Photograph:

This photograph was taken by me in April of 2005 of Old Faithful in Yellow-stone Park erupting. Unfortunately the eruption was already waning when I snapped this picture and for that reason the height of the water spout is approximately fifty percent. I thought it fitting to draw a parallel to the faithfulness of God.

The Back Cover Photograph:

It is a photograph of an olive tree in the garden of Gethsemane. It is extremely old. Gethsemane is located at the foot of the Mount of Olives a few hundred meters from the walls of Jerusalem. Some persons estimate this tree to be at least 4,000 years old, others disclaim this, and estimate it's age at 2,000 years. They base this assumption on the fact that the Roman's would most likely have destroyed all adult trees when they took Jerusalem in 70AD.

Art.

IS THERE A GOD?
WHO IS THIS JESUS OF NAZARETH,
MAN OF MYTH?

**This book is dedicated to the memory of
my parents: William Stanley, Fanny Jane
Juanita and my brother Oliver Provost.**

Acknowledgements:

**To Susan, without her unfailing support
and encouragement this book would not
have been possible. My editors: Mr.
Michael Ross Bandruk: Mr. Kevin
Russell Travers: and Mrs. Agnes Jeanette
Perreault: To those persons who
graciously submitted their personal
experiences recorded in Part One:
Chapter One.**

**Is There a God?
Who is this Jesus of Nazareth
Man or Myth?**

Index:

Introduction: Page 1

**Part One: Angels, Miracles,
Saints, The Christian Belief,
Christology and Evidence
of God in Nature.**

**Chapter One: Miracles, Angelic
Visitations and Saints:**

Sunday April 22 2001: Page 11

An Encounter of the Third Kind: Page 15

Glendale Arizona: USA Thanksgiving
Weekend 2011: Page 19

Bismarck North Dakota: The
Canadian Thanksgiving Weekend
October of 1975: Page 20

May 7, 2011 George C and Family: Page 23

Colton Burpo and Akiane
Kramarik: Page 26

Is there life after death? Page 28

Alex Malarkey: Page 29

Lillianne and Micheal Nov. 1983 Page 31

August 08, 2008. Page 46

Other books of angelic visitations: Page 48

Sainthood: Page 49

**Chapter Two: Bible
Mysteries:** Page 51

**Chapter Three:
Christianity:** Page 55

The Christian Belief: Page 60

The Nicene Creed: Page 61

The Apostles' Creed: Page 62

The Teaching of Jesus: Page 63

**Chapter: Four: What some
notables have said about God,
The Bible and Jesus Christ:** Page 65

Chapter Five: The Life and Times of Jesus the Biblical Jesus: Page 73

Biblical Prophecies relating to Jesus: Page 73

Chapter Six: The Biblical account of Jesus' Ministry and Death: Page 83

The Book of Mark: Page 83

The Book of Matthew: Page 85

The Book of Luke: Page 86

The Book of John: Page 86

The Birth of Jesus: Page 87

What was Jesus Like? Page 88

Parables taught by Jesus: Page 89

Miracles performed by Jesus: Page 90

Jesus' Trial, Crucifixion, Death and Burial: Page 91

The Empty tomb and Jesus' many appearances: Page 92

The Ascension of Jesus into
Heaven: Page 94

The Shroud of Turin: Page 95

**Chapter Seven: Jesus’
Prophecies from the New
Testament:** Page 99

Dating the Biblical Books: Page 99

The Destruction of the Temple in
Jerusalem Prophesied by Jesus: Page 100

Jesus prophesied there would be
Famine and Earthquakes: Page 102

Jesus prophesied there would be
False Prophets/Persons claiming
to be Him: Page 104

Jesus prophesied of The Unknown
Day and Hour: Page 109

Jesus prophesied Christians would
be persecuted: Page 110

Gamaliel: Human followers of
Christ will disperse: Page 125

**Chapter Eight: Do Birds,
Reptiles and Animals
suggest the existence
of God?** Page 127

Green Sea Turtles: Page 127

Salmon: Page 128

Nesting Birds: Page 129

Ocean currents/ sea creatures: Page 130

Skin of your teeth: Page 131

Development of a fetus: Page 132

**Chapter Nine: Is the Biblical
creation story in conflict with
the scientific community?** Page 136

**Part One: Summary and
Conclusions:** Page 149

**Part Two: Chapter Ten:
History and development of
the Holy Books, Archaeological
discoveries and Old Testament
Biblical Prophecies:** Page 154

The Holy Books:	Page 154
Apocrypha:	Page 154
Judaism's Torah:	Page 158
The Protestant Bible:	Page 161
The Roman Catholic Bible:	Page 161
The History and development of the Bibles:	Page 162

Chapter Eleven: Archeological Sites and Language

Development:	Page 175
---------------------	----------

Chapter Twelve: Biblical Prophecies and Statements of Interest:

Angels:	Page 186
The Biblical Enoch and the Book of Enoch:	Page 189
The movement of heavenly bodies:	Page 192
The earth will be destroyed by fire:	Page 194

Chapter Thirteen: Old Testament History: Page 195

The Birth of Israel and Judaism: Page 195

Melchizedek: Page 199

Pithom and Ramses: Page 200

The Adam and Eve seal and the temptation Seal: Page 205

Archeological Evidence of a Great Flood: Page 207

Chapter Fourteen: Ancient World Powers: Page 211

True Prophets: Page 213

The fall of Jericho: Page 214

Caesarea Philippi: Page 217

Bet She'an: Page 218

The fall of Israel and Jewish Diaspora: Page 221

Chapter Fifteen: Biblical Prophecies against Nations and World Powers: Page 235

Biblical Prophecies against Edom: Page 235

Biblical Prophecies against Assyria: Page 239

Biblical Prophecies against the
Babylonian Nation and the city of
Babylon: Page 243

Biblical Prophecies against Israel
(Northern Kingdom) and Judah
(Southern Kingdom): Page 245

Habakkuk's conversation with his
God regarding Judah: Page 253

Biblical prophecies against the
Judean King Hezekiah: Page 255

Biblical prophecies against the
Judean King Zedekiah: Page 256

**Part Two: Summary and
Conclusions:** Page 260

**Part Three: Chapter Sixteen:
Religions:** Page 264

Ancient and Major World
Religions: Page 264

A Cult: Page 265

Hinduism: Page 267

Buddhism: Page 269

The two faces of Islam: Page 271

Atheism: Page 281

**Part Three: Summary and
Conclusions:** Page 293

**CONCLUSIONS DRAWN
FROM RESEARCHED
MATERIAL:** Page 295

**Part Four: Chapter Seventeen:
Biblical Prophecies
of Jesus:** Page 302

Christology Prophesied in the
Bible: Page 302

**Bibliography: Books
Cited and/or Read:** Page 313

.....

IS THERE A GOD? WHO IS THIS JESUS CHRIST OF NAZARETH, MAN OR MYTH?

Introduction:

The log house they lived in, in rural Saskatchewan was not the “Best Western”. It was barely able to shelter them from the elements. Perhaps you know what they were like or have seen photographs of log houses from the early 1900’s. There was no indoor plumbing, no electricity, no telephones and no central heating. It was a place where one could lay in bed on a clear cloudless night snuggled down under countless layers of blankets and count the shining stars through the holes in the roof. And so it happened a very long time ago, during a cold blustery February night alone in their log house, with her husband and three other children that a woodcutter’s wife gave birth to a son.

This babe, their fourth child survived, grew and became a teenager and started to ponder his surroundings and of course noticing girls. He marvelled at nature being regenerated every spring and dying off in the fall. He gazed into the night sky and wondered where and how all this began. Could it have happened by chance? Where and from what did the galaxies and the universe originate? Are there others? Why do humans have a thumb, walk upright and have a developed brain that makes them superior to

all other animals on earth. Do we, or did we ever have “skin on our teeth? Did we evolve by natural selection as some suggest, or were we created? What is the origin of instinct? Likely from the moment when primitive man first started to reason, both men and women down through the ages have gazed around them and up into the sky in wonderment and asked themselves these questions. Hopefully you will find the answers in this book.

Christians and also some very learned men and women who may not be Christians suggest that it was a master plan of a Supreme Being they refer to as God. A Christian is a person who is the follower of the teachings of Jesus Christ and they believe he is the Son of God. Many Christians believe that God was the creationist and do so entirely by faith obtained from their religious background or by some unusual miraculous event that occurred during their life. I examined some of these unusual events and religious faiths with the results being presented within the pages of this book.

This book is not meant to be a course in theology, nor is it meant to put forward the doctrines of various churches or religious organizations. Instead I have examined available evidence to try and determine whether or not God exists. My hope is that you will read a few chapters before drawing any conclusions.

In the world today there exists unrest and turmoil in many nations. Witness what has happened in 2011-2012 in those nations that have virtually no Christian population. Nations whose religion is predominately Islam such as Egypt, Libya and Syria appear to be collapsing from within. Here in Canada the Christian faith is being challenged by innumerable signs of the denial of God. There are varying degrees of religious scepticism and disbelief, while others doubt the existence of God. Still others profess not to believe in God at all.

We live in a world where religious views, personal views and value systems often clash. We thirst for authenticity, we have a fear of the artificial and false and we are above all searching for truth and honesty. It occurred to me, no religious writers, at least the writers I have read, have ever offered extensive proof that God and Jesus Christ exists. In their writing they always make the assumption that God exists. There are others who claim Jesus and God do not exist: but what proof do they offer to support their arguments. If we could answer three basic questions we could then declare a winner. The questions are: Why is there something? Why not nothing? And why do we exist? This became the impetus to investigate whether or not God and Jesus Christ exist and within the covers of this book to document the results of my research.

The title of this book, the two fundamental questions asked: Is there a God

and who is this Jesus of Nazareth refers to the God that both those of the Jewish faith and those of the Christian faith believe in. For this reason their belief and what has been presented in the Torah (the Jewish holy book) and the Bible (the Christian holy book) will be scrutinized extensively and referred to in various places throughout this book. In Part Two: in chapter Ten “The Bible”, the doctrine, stories, prophecies, unusual statements, historical events and personal experiences contained within it will be examined. Christians believe the Bible is the word of God.

I have read a number of books on Jewish history, books on world religions and studied both the Old and New Testaments of the Christian Bible. I have read three different Arabic to English translations of the Qur’an. They are the translations of Adullah Yusufali, Al Buhkari and Shakir. I have read the Book of Mormon. I have traveled to Israel and into Palestinian held territories and also visited Christian and Muslim holy sites in that country. Additionally over the years, I have kept various related newspaper articles and also articles relating to the findings of archeological digs particularly those sites located along the Euphrates River. The clay tablets found at these sites are in the Assyrian language, the Babylonian language and also in cuneiform, while clay tablets found elsewhere were usually only written in cuneiform. To a historian this is of particular interest. Prior to the 18-20th centuries AD and

the discovery of these locations containing artifacts in what is now modern day Iraq, Iran, Turkey Jordan, Lebanon and Israel to name a few, the Christian Bible was the only source of information regarding these ancient cities and ancient civilizations including their customs and royalty. When the language on these tablets was unlocked and the information on them translated to modern day languages, the world was given the history of the ancient past. In most cases it parallels the biblical account. It therefore behooves us to be somewhat familiar with these archeological sites and what has been found during excavations and to understand the development of various written languages. Information on the development of written language and archeology findings is presented in Chapter Eleven.

In answering the question who is Jesus Christ and if there is a Supreme Being referred to as God I have put forward unusual personal experiences that are extremely difficult to explain. Christians refer to these as being “miracles”. I have put forth the Christian belief as I understand it and examined the prophecies regarding Jesus and in particular his lineage, his birth and place of birth, his ministry, his death on a cross and according to the Bible his resurrection from the dead. I then examined the fate of some of his followers particularly those of his inner circle, his disciples and Christian persecution over the last 2000 years. I have also examined what some very notable persons have said

about the existence of God and Jesus. I examined whether or not the biblical creation story is in conflict with the scientific geographic eras. I examined the development of the Bible and also examined other major world religions. I examined Old Testament mysteries, statements, miracles and prophecies. I compared them to historical records to determine whether or not they were fulfilled. With the same purpose in mind, I also scrutinized the Bible's Old and New Testaments searching for prophecies and or statements regarding Jesus Christ.

The Christian belief that the Bible is the word of God is further supported by the fact they believe many of the Bible's prophecies have been fulfilled. The writers of Halley's Bible Commentary claim that the Bible contains 1093 prophecies. To examine all 1093 would be very laborious, the doctrine of Christianity revolve around Jesus Christ so would it not make sense to examine the prophecies concerning him? In examining the Bible's prophecies I have found recorded in at least 697 places, 71 prophecies (there may be more) regarding the life and times of Jesus. These, I have recorded and they make up the entire last chapter of this book.

In particular the Biblical Prophecies will be scrutinized and compared to historical events as recorded by non religious writers. This comparison should then ascertain whether or not the prophesied event has happened and when it occurred. I was

astonished at what I found. I am sure that you will be pleasantly surprised when you read through this book and consider the conclusions put forward.

In answering the above two questions, that have been debated for centuries, to arrive at the conclusions that I put forward, I have examined atheism as presented by Richard Dawkins and Christopher Hitchens, studied Mormonism, the Cults and the ancient religions of Judaism, Buddhism, Hinduism, Taoism, Confucianism, Shintoism, Islam Sikhism and Christianity. Within some of these religions there are similarities particularly regarding the story of creation, the great flood and how one should live his/her life.

Another example of similarities within the doctrine of Judaism and Christianity there are prophets, persons who are directed by God to make certain statements and/or perform certain unusual acts. Judaism and Christianity share the same God and the 42 prophets named in the Torah, the Jewish Holy Book and the Bible, the Christian Holy Book. Muslims, the followers of Islam, have their god Allah, the prophet Muhammad and at least two angels. Within Judaism and Christianity angels who were created by God number at least 100,000,000 and play major rolls. Angels are messengers of God and perform unusual acts under God's direction. In Christianity and Islam both Christ and Muhammad ascended to heaven.

It is not my intent to further examine these similarities except to say that they are there and for that reason perhaps some copying directly from one religious book to another may have occurred. I have examined and presented the doctrine of other major world religions in Section Three: Chapter Sixteen “Major World Religions”.

The results of a recent Ipsos/Reuters poll indicates, that fifty one percent of 18,829 people contacted from 23 different countries believe in a God or a Supreme Being and life after death. (Calgary Herald April 26, 2011). The article did not enlighten us as to how many persons from each country were surveyed, however approximately 9,603 of all persons polled believe in a God or a Supreme Being. Using their numbers and considering that the present world population exceeds 7 billion persons, 51 percent translates to approximately 3.6 billion persons who believe in a Supreme Being or a God.

The above survey is perhaps a bit misleading. When I consider the religions of the world, and from my research, I found that 6 billion persons world wide believe in the existence of a God or Gods. In addition to the 2.9 billion Christians the followers of the teaching of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, there are also 1.3 billion Muslims, whose god is Allah. There are 1.3 billion followers of Hinduism and Buddhism who also believe in a god or gods. Another 0.5 billion persons are

followers of other minor religions. An additional 1 billion persons are atheists, persons who do not believe a God exists. Included in Christianity are approximately 14 million people who are followers of Judaism the forerunner of Christianity, who worship the same god as do the Christians. Six billion is a significant number of persons who believe in a Supreme Being, This prompted me to investigate their beliefs.

Although it is not explicitly explained, one can be quite sure that included in the minor religious group are the cults. A cult is a group of persons fanatically attracted to the teaching or doctrine of their spiritual leader, regardless of what name he or she may be known by. **The spiritual leader blends some of the doctrines of Christianity, Judaism or some other religion with their doctrine. In other words they steal part of the doctrine of other religions. This is extremely important to remember when perusing the pages of this book or when studying what minor religions have to offer.**

The title of this book, the two questions asked: Is there a God and who is this Jesus of Nazareth Man or Myth refers to the God that Jewish people believe in and to the God and Jesus that Christians believe in. For this reason their belief and what has been presented in their Torah and Bible will, in various places through out this book be scrutinized extensively. In the chapter entitled "The Bible" the doctrine, stories, historical

events and personal experiences contained within the pages of the Bible will be examined.

When examining prophecies contained with the Bible, I first scrutinized non-religious documents to determine whether or not the prophecy came true, if none were available I then searched the pages of the Bible for any available information regarding the incident. I do have a religious back ground and am familiar with church doctrine. For this reason perhaps I am a bit biased. I have tried not to be or at the ever least to limit it. I have also tried to exclude the doctrines of the various churches that I am familiar with trying to remain focused on answering the two questions asked in the title of this book. I have also tried to write this book in a language that everyone will be able to understand regardless of their vocation.

The more research I did, the more books I read, the more I searched the “Net”, the deeper I dug the more over whelming the uncovered evidence became. After reading this book I hope that you are able to come to the same conclusion that I did.

The photographs included are those that I took while touring Israel or obtained from the internet and for that reason I believe I have not violated any copywriting law.

Part One: Angels, Miracles, Saints, The Christian Belief, Christology and Evidence of God in Nature.

Chapter One: Miracles? Angelic visitations? Saints?

Sunday April 22, 2001:

“For God commands the angels to guard you in all your ways” Psalm 91:11: The New American Bible.

It is not often that one can remember specific details at a certain time on a certain day. However, neither my wife Susan nor I will ever forget the events of Sunday morning April 22, 2001. We still ponder what we experienced that day. We were en-route from Calgary Alberta to Calimesa California to visit my cousin Howard and his family with a planned stop over in Las Vegas. Early that Sunday morning we had just nicely cleared the city limits of Las Vegas, heading south west toward the Nevada California border when Susan noticed a lady in a car next to us waving violently and pointing to the rear of our car. We acknowledged her gestures and made our way to the right hand shoulder of the road through what we thought was unusually heavy traffic for that early hour of the day. After braking to a stop I opened the door of our car and looked back, sure enough the rear wheel tire was almost flat. Our vehicle at that time was a 1996 Ford Crown

Victoria whose hubs cap required a wrench to remove them. We kept this wrench in the glove box of the car. I asked Susan to get me the wrench and then slowly opened the door and cautiously got out trying to make sure I was not hit by any passing vehicle. Closing the door I turned toward the rear of our car with the intent of getting the car's jack and spare tire from the trunk so that I could replace the flat tire.

At this time I noticed that a few yards directly behind our car was a police patrol car with lights flashing. The officer inside appeared to be talking on the car's radio. I proceeded to get the tire out of the trunk of our car and momentarily the officer was beside me and asked how long I had been stopped. I responded that we had just stopped a few moments ago. He also asked if I had a good jack or just the jack that Ford supplied with the car. I told him that I only had the jack that came with the car. He then suggested that he would leave his car with its lights flashing sitting behind our car until we got the tire changed. He also insisted that we would use the roll away hydraulic jack he kept in his car to jack our car up, and this happened. After all who is going to argue with a Highway Traffic Officer, especially one who was this big? I stand 6 feet 1 and ½ inches tall. This officer must have been at least a foot taller than me. Surprisingly he rolled up his sleeves, so to speak, and helped me change the tire. During the time it took to remove the flat tire and replace it with the spare tire we

chatted about many things that do not necessarily need to be recorded here.

After the tire was changed and the jack and tire wrenches returned to the respective vehicle trunks and before thanking and saying good bye to this officer, I asked him where one might get a tire repaired this time of day on a Sunday morning. At first he indicated to me that I would have to go back into Las Vegas to the extreme north end of "The Strip" where a tire shop was located. He then seemed to be deep in thought, or to be listening, receiving instructions from someone and then told me I was to drive south to exit 161 go off to the right and within a mile I would be at a truck stop. They would repair the tire for me. I thanked him, shook hands with him and said my good bye. I walked to the front of our car opened the door and climbed in. Susan turned to wave good bye to this Officer to find that both he and his patrol car were no longer behind us. In fact we could not see his car anywhere on the highway or in the ditch adjacent to the highway. At the time we mildly wondered how he could have disappeared so quickly but turned our attention to getting back into traffic and finding exit 161. At the truck stop we were told they would repair our tire but I would have to put it back on our car as our spare was just the small so called "donut tire" supplied with the vehicle and it would have to be replaced before continuing on to Calimesa.

While waiting for the tire repairs Susan and I decided to have coffee and perhaps enjoy a piece of pie in the truck stop coffee shop. It was here that we began to wonder what the heck had just happened to us. Our recollection of highway 15 from Las Vegas has north and south bound traffic separated by a very large cement barricade and at the point where we had our flat tire, no side exits. This officer along with his patrol car seemed to have vanished in the blink of an eye. He was no where to be seen, neither on the highway nor in the ditch. How could this be? This was no illusion. There was a police officer, there was an automobile equipped as a police vehicle, a jack and a tire wrench that were physically used to jack up our car and to remove and replace the wheel nuts. We still do not know nor do we fully understand what happened. Could we have had a visitation from an angel? We do not honestly know except to say that there are a number of biblical verses telling us angels can change their disguise. In Hebrews 13: 2 of the New American Bible we read as follows: "Do not neglect hospitality for through it some have unknowingly entertained angels".

Almost always before embarking on a trip Susan or I will pray for travel mercies and also ask our God to send his angels to protect us.

In Chapter One I pointed out that Christians believe from what was written by ancient Hebrew and Christian writers, angels

created by God and taking direction from God perform various functions. We are also told that they, angels can change their appearance so that we may not at first recognize them as angels.

Clifford B.A.,B.Ed.,M.Ed.,Ph.D. who taught at the university level for twenty five years and his wife Charlotte may have also experienced an angelic visitation. They have graciously agreed to share their experience with us. Here in Charlotte's own words is the account of what happened to them.

*An Encounter of the Third Kind?
As told by
Charlotte C.*

Sunday, June 22, 1997, dawned like any other Sunday. A warm shower and a quiet breakfast were followed by church. Except for one event, the day promised to be uneventful.

On this day, we were scheduled, as part of our church's outreach senior ministry, to conduct the religious service at Hillcrest seniors' home. On this day, I would play the piano and my husband, Clifford, would conduct the service including the sermonette. What was unusual was that we were to operate solo; no other individuals from our church body were able to be present to assist us. And therein lay a problem. These seniors loved to sing and neither of us could 'carry a tune in a basket.'

As we drove to Hillcrest Personal Care home, Cliff gave voice to our concerns by saying, "Well, the good Lord is going to have to work a miracle to get us through this one." And I agreed. Our one consolation was that these seniors loved to sing and would often burst into singing during the playing of a familiar hymn. For them, most hymns were familiar.

When we arrived, the staff were already bringing the residents into the makeshift sanctuary. It was obvious that there would be an overflow of attendees. With more than the usual trepidation, I sat down at the piano and began to play some hymns that would set the mood for the sermon's topic, "The Lord is My Sheppard." Cliff busied himself behind the pulpit arranging his notes. Neither of us was prepared for what was to happen next.

I had just finished the third hymn when I became aware that someone was sitting beside me on the piano bench. I turned to see who it was. There sat a nicely groomed middle aged woman with golden hair. In response to my quizzical look, she said, "Oh, I love your playing!" Still taken aback, I responded with a pleased "Thank You!"

Then, the stranger took the initiative and invited me to join her with a cheery "Let's sing." When I protested that I was no singer, she reassured me with "Sure you can. Just sing along with me." And then, with an air of confidence, she said, "Let's sing this one."

The hymn before us was "More Love to Thee,"

To say the least, I was non-plussed. Nothing like this had ever happened to me before. As a professional musician, I was well aware of the problems associated with accompanying would be singing 'stars.' Some like my husband could not carry a tune; others could not keep the tempo. This woman wanted to sing without even the faintest suggestion that a practice session might have been beneficial. I almost panicked.

Then, as I hesitantly began to play, it happened. This woman burst forth with the melody in a magnificent soprano voice; she was right on pitch in the proper tempo. I was astounded. But no more than Cliff. As he recalled the happening, he said, "When she began to sing, I first thought that you had found a new voice. For, busy with my preparations, I had not seen anyone come to sit beside you."

To make a long story shorter, the service ran rather smoothly. As each hymn was announced the lovely stranger would leave her place in the front row and join me on the piano bench. After each hymn, she would return to her chair and listen politely to what Cliff had to say.

As the service came to an end, Cliff proceeded with the final prayer and benediction. It was then that he noticed that

the “guest performer” was just leaving the room. Wanting to thank her and find out who she was, he hastened to the swinging doors and went into the adjoining hallway. To his surprise, there was no one in sight; the hallway was empty. In disbelief, he checked the wash rooms and the abutting corridor. The lady, it seemed, had vanished.

Back in the sanctuary, he found me talking to the residents. None of them had ever seen this lady before. Furthermore, the nursing staff, when questioned, protested that they had not seen --and did not know--anyone who fit the description that we gave of her. When we reported the matter to the others of the senior’s ministry group, we were met with 'off hand' remarks and looks of obvious disbelief.

To this day, now fifteen years since she left as mysteriously as she had come, neither of us have been able to find out who this beautiful lady with the lovely voice was or might be.... Who was she? From whence did she come? Where did she go? And why, of all the Sundays in which we participated, did she come on that particular day?

Could it be that the Good Sheppard looked down upon us that day and “worked a miracle?” You, the reader, be the judge.

*Brandon, Manitoba
January 10, 2011.*

When I reflect upon what Clifford C. and his wife Charlotte have written and when I think back to what my wife Susan and I experienced when we had a flat tire south of Las Vegas I can offer no plausible explanation other than perhaps we did in fact encounter and had a visitation from one of God's Angels.

Glendale Arizona: USA Thanksgiving Weekend 2011:

The Canadian Television News Network (CTV) carried an article on a young boy who perhaps was under water for 30 or more minutes and survived. This prompted me to search the internet to ascertain if more details were available. What I found at (azfamily.com) is as follows: Caleb Teodorescu a toddler who is not yet 3 years of age may have been at the bottom of the family swimming pool for as much as 30 minutes before being found.

His mother Mihaela pulled him from the bottom of the pool and then a neighbor started CPR. Caleb may have been without a heart beat for an additional 28 minutes before arriving by ambulance at Banner Thunderbird Medical center. Here Dr. Corey Philpot was one of the hospital personnel attending to Caleb. Caleb being in critical condition was packed in ice to keep his tiny body in a cold hibernatory state to prevent further brain damage.

Four days later he started to show signs of life and was eventually released from hospital, with no signs of brain damage. How could this be that a human can survive that long without breathing on their own and without a normal heart beat? His father and mother are: “grateful for their miracle of medicine and something else”. Caleb’s father Ovidiu is quoted as saying “they did everything that they could humanly do, but the rest was God”.

Bismarck North Dakota: The Canadian Thanksgiving Weekend October of 1975.

“Mommy, daddy is on the bottom of the pool” these words are engraved in Rose K’s memory bank for as long as she lives.

I first met Anthony (Tony) K. in the summer of 1969. He and I were Traffic Managers of companies who held membership in CITL: The Canadian Industrial Transportation League. The Traffic Managers of Saskatchewan companies who were members of CITL normally met ten months of each year, nine of which normally were held at Davidson, Saskatchewan and the tenth being an annual convention held at Waskesiu in Prince Albert National Park in June of each year. This is where my wife Susan met both Tony and Rose and of course I met Rose. Eventually Tony retired and Susan and I relocated to Calgary in 1991. Then in 1998 Tony and Rose also relocated to Calgary, we reacquainted and have become

good friends. It was in Calgary in 2004 that Tony became a Deacon in the Catholic Church. This then takes us back to Bismarck and four year old Paul K's words: "mommy, daddy is on the bottom of the pool" and the events of that week as told to me by Rose.

"My family and our friends Joan and Del were spending the Canadian Thanksgiving weekend at Bismarck North Dakota. After checking into a motel, Tony was playing in the swimming pool with our four year old son Paul while I was enjoying the hot tub with our five year old daughter Tanya and two year old son Doug. Suddenly I heard Paul say to me "mommy, daddy is on the bottom of the pool" I scooped up Doug and Tanya and ran to the edge of the pool. Sure enough there was my husband Tony face down on the bottom of the pool. My ensuing screams attracted a young man who jumped into the pool and tried to rescue Tony. This young man was not strong enough to pull Tony from the bottom of the pool as Tony was caught face down in the pools recirculating pump's intake. This young man swam to the surface and as soon as his head broke water he screamed for help. After catching a breath of air, he again swam to the bottom of the pool. This time he wrapped his arms around Tony's body and pulled him free from the recirculating pump and from the bottom of the pool. A nurse who was there administrated CPR until the ambulance and the EMT personnel arrived. Tony being unconscious and not breathing the EM Technicians inserted a respirator tube into

Tony's airway and I made the decision that he should be taken to the Catholic Hospital, St. Alexius Medical Center in Bismarck

No one knows how long Tony was on the bottom of the pool before Paul came from the pool area to the hot tub area and told me that his dad was on the bottom of the pool. Also, no one knows what or who might have prompted Paul to be concerned for his dad's safety. I do however, know that considerable time elapsed from the time my screams attracted attention until Tony was pulled from the water. At the hospital I was told that the prognosis was not good and that my husband would probably not make it. Being without oxygen for a considerable period of time and the fact that Tony was not breathing on his own, it was highly unlikely that he would survive and if he did then the question became how much brain damage had occurred. The attending physician debated whether or not the life support system should be removed, 48 hours had now elapsed and Tony was not breathing on his own. While the physician considered the options, Del, Joan, myself and the hospital's priest had gathered in the hospital's chapel to pray. We prayed to our God that Tony would be restored to life, fully healed with no side effects.

Apparently the attending physician had decided that one more attempt should be made to revive Tony prior to removing the life support system. I was invited into the Intensive Care Unit to try once more to get

Tony to respond. I was encouraged to talk to him and to pray for him to see if there would be any response. In faith I took Tony's hand and said "Tony, I am here, everything is going to be alright. Do you hear me?" At that moment I felt Tony squeezing my hand. I continued to pray to God our Lord Jesus to perform a great miracle and completely heal Tony.

The doctor realizing that Tony had responded renewed the efforts to get him to wake up from the coma. Tony's ability to breath on his own was restored and slowly he regained his strength. Eight days later he walked out of the hospital".

How could this be, that an adult underwater for such a long period of time and then when brought to the surface unconscious and not breathing survive with no side effects? Tony and Rose will both very quickly tell you that their God answered the prayers of those who prayed for Tony.

May 7, 2011: George C. and Family:

Accompanied by his wife Marion, his daughter Barbara and her fiancé Al of Calgary Alberta is what George C. (expressed in his own words) experienced.

"While shopping at a major Calgary shopping complex for bedroom furniture I was suddenly stopped by a man and a woman. Try as I may for the life of me I cannot

remember every detail of their facial features. What has been burned into my memory banks is that the man was of average build, had unusually golden colored hair, perhaps the most golden colored hair I have ever seen, was smiling and to my recollection never spoke. The other unusual thing about this person's hair was that it sparkled as if something had been sprinkled into his hair and was reflecting sunlight, this of course was impossible account we were indoors at this time.

The lady was extremely tall, perhaps six foot five or six inches tall. Her hair was of a raven black color. They had stepped immediately in front of us and the lady said to me: "you have passed by us twice before, and now on this the third time we want to pray for you". She immediately placed her hand on my shoulder and asked the gentleman with her if she could say the blessing. He just nodded his head in the affirmative and she started to pray for me. I can remember hearing her voice however; I do not remember word for word her prayer. It did include a prayer that my knee would be healed and she also told me that there would be almost immediate changes in my life. I turned to Marion and said to her "wasn't it nice that these people would pray for me" and when I turned back they had vanished. Where did they go? From my vantage point I could see almost the entire bedroom furniture area and they certainly could not have exited it in the second or two that I had taken my eyes off them.

There are a number of very unusual things about this encounter. All four of us saw them and then we didn't. Marion and Barbara are willing to talk about this incident however, Al just simply said what just happened here and refuses to discuss this experience. If we had passed them a number of times before, account their unusual appearance we would have surely noticed them, as their appearance was somewhat removed from what one would consider normal.

Shortly after this encounter the pain in my knee has decreased to the point that I no longer am forced to walk with a cane. We have found much nicer and more acceptable rental property. The church that we attend has now become part of a main line Pentecostal church whose doctrine I strongly object to. I have been very vocal to the congregation that we no longer preach the gospel however, my words seem to be falling on deaf ears and for that reason we are considering leaving this church."

To this day I still wonder who these people were. How could they appear and then just disappear? Why did they only pray for me? Why did they appear to us, for what reason?

How could it be that four shoppers are greeted by two persons who then just seem to vanish into thin air? George and Marion are convinced they were God's Angels.

Colton Burpo and Akiane Kramarik:

Colton Burpo was born May 19, 1999. When he was 3 years 10 months old he suffered a ruptured appendix. This apparently went undiagnosed for 4 or 5 days. The result being that he had surgery March 5, 2003 and almost lost his life. Soon after his recovery he started relaying to his parents that he had gone to heaven and that he had met Jesus, saw God, angels, his sister, and his grandfather who had passed away July 1976. Additionally he described in detail where his mom and dad were during the time he was undergoing surgery. All of the events experienced by Colton and his family can be researched by Googling Colton Burpo or by reading the book "Heaven is for Real" written by his father Todd Burpo. **This book is well worth the read.** I would like to comment on a few of the things Colton relayed to his parents, in particular those regarding Jesus, God and the angel Gabriel. Colton suggested to his parents that God was really, really big and sat on a throne, Jesus sat on his right hand and the angel Gabriel sat on God's left hand side. Everyone in Heaven is young and no one wears glasses. Unusual comments from a child not yet four years of age. Jesus was the only one in Heaven who did not have wings and that he had markers. At first Colton's parents did not understand "markers" upon further questioning Colton told them that the markers were red in color. Thinking that the markers Colton was trying to describe might

be color markers that children can draw or color with Colton's father asked him to show where Jesus had the markers. Colton who had been sitting on the floor got up and with his right hand pointed to the palm of his left hand and then with left hand pointed to the palm of his right hand, then bent over and pointed to the top of his feet. Colton's parents are convinced that Colton was pointing to crucifixions wounds.

Colton described Jesus' appearance with the most distinguishing feature being how really nice his eyes were. This then brings us to a young woman named Akiane Kramarik who at four years of age started telling her parents about her visions of heaven and how beautiful it was there and that Jesus had really nice eyes. Additionally she started drawing, drawing eventually led to painting. Akiane's story can be viewed by Googling Akiane Kramarik CNN. Here one will find a number of videos regarding her unusual life experiences. At age eight Akiane painted a picture she named Prince of Peace. When Colton's parents showed him this painting he studied it intensely and then told his parents that it was Jesus. Could it be that Colton age four was taken up into heaven and Akiane at age four had visions of Heaven.

(Note: I have never found any reference to who might be seated on the left hand of God. Everything I have read regarding seating arrangement in God's Heaven only mentions that Jesus will be seated at God's right hand. Colton who at age 3 years 10 months claims the angel Gabriel is seated at God's left. What are the

possibility that a child this young would know of, and the name of an angel? Could it be that God took Colton into heaven and then sent him back to us to further solidify and offer more evidence of His existence?)

Is there life after death?

This question for the time being remains unanswered. To my knowledge there is no scientific data to support that man has a soul and that it lives beyond his or her death. Having said that, there is an interesting book dealing with the experiences of more than 150 people declared clinically dead, who and by what ever means, were revived and in most cases lived for a consider period of time after being revived. These persons are said to have an out of body experience. An out of body experience is when a person dies and after being revived can tell what was happening to their bodies at that time. Some claim that during their out of body experience they were taken up into heaven. Their experiences and descriptions of life after death are so similar that they may change forever your view of life, death and your spiritual survival. These persons, their stories, and the accounts of their out of body experiences are put forward by Doctor Raymond A. Moody Jr. M.D. in his book, "Life after Life": Bantam Books. Another one of many books dealing with unusual person experiences is "He's Alive: Volume 11: Edited by Fr. Peter B. Coughlin. Here Fr. Coughlin provides us with another 23 stories of unusual personal experiences. It is not my intent here to discuss the contents of

Fr. Couglin's book or Dr. Moody's book however; both books are well worth the read. Alex Malarkey and Lilliane S. may have had what is referred to as "an out of body experience".

Alex Malarkey:

Alex Malarkey at age six might have had an out of body experience. In the book "The boy who came back from heaven" Tyndale House Publishers Inc: Kevin Malarkey: Alex's father and others put forward the events of and those following a horrific automobile accident in which Alex suffered severe injuries to C1 and C2. First responders to the accident scene found Alex unconscious and not breathing in the rear seat of the family car. Kevin, Alex's father was outside the car lying in the ditch. Alex did not die, was in a full life assisted coma for two months and then slowly ever so slowly started to communicate with his parents and care givers by eye movements and some facial expressions. Many weeks later Alex slowly regained his speech one word at a time. He then started to accurately tell his parents all the events that occurred during and after the accident. He told of looking down and watching angels remove his dad from the car, of people praying over him while he was seated in the car, of angels holding his head and helping him breathe. He was able to accurately describe the attire of all first responders. He also included the fact that someone had given his dad a telephone to call

his mother and all events surrounding getting him onto a flat board and into the helicopter and the helicopter ride to the hospital in Columbus Ohio.

Alex's story does not end here. He told his parents and care givers of being in the presences of Jesus and that Jesus kept telling not to be afraid because he was going to live. Alex was taken to heaven, into the city of and into the presence of God. Like Colton Burpo, Alex described God as being very, very big. Alex told of many more events involving Jesus and angels however I am not going to address them here. Instead I would suggest you obtain a copy of this book and read them yourself. It is an incredible story that his parents and many other persons suggest to us as being a true story.

Lilliane now of Calgary Alberta more than 28 years ago had a very unusual experience. The events of November 25th and 26th of 1983 and the succeeding weeks are still very vividly remembered by her and her husband Micheal. A number of weeks ago when I shared with Lil as she is affectionately known, that I was writing this book and what it's contents would be, she shared with me what had happened to her. They have graciously and generously agreed to share their experience with me and to have it included in this book. The following in her words and those of her husband Micheal is their account of what happened.

Lilliane and Micheal November 1983:

“Lilliane - The following account of my death event of Nov. 25, 1983 would be considered a “Near-Death Experience” by authors of many books on this subject; however, I have the most sincere belief in the inaccuracy of that term”. There was nothing ‘Near’ about it. I have the faith and conviction of that. I know what I know. It is what it is.

What is dying and death like? Is the process of dying painful? Is it scary? What, who do we see during or after death? Is there really a greeting by God, one of His angels, family or friend? Such a mysterious wonderment. One common thread of these experiences that I've since read is that we no longer fear death, and I join that group.

I was raised Catholic and believed in God but had never given thought to death and had no preconceived ideas of what death entailed. This was a second marriage for both my husband and I. Micheal and I had been married a year and a half and were living on the military base in North Bay, Ontario at this time. He had a son and daughter from his first marriage who lived with their mother, and I, at 32, was the mother of a 6 year-old boy. My former husband would not allow my sons adoption. I was in excellent health and death was just not ever a thought except in the context of old age.

Ontario's winter months are cold and damp and I typically bundled up very well while my husband was typically oblivious to cold weather and didn't wear gloves or zip up a coat more than half way. This beginning of November I had been going through an especially heavy menstrual cycle, which spanned a three week plus period. I started running a fever and couldn't shake it. We went shopping to get me out of the house, but this one day we knew I didn't just have a usual winter flu when my husband and son were bundled up to the nose and faces turned away from the wind while I meandered alongside with a short, open fall coat, no hat, scarf or gloves and feeling quite comfortable.

My family doctor's reaction during my second visit for this problem was to ask me how long I thought it would last -- and then advised that when the bleeding did stop, to come back and he'd do a D & C. (As fate would have it Dr. McIntyre passed away in the early weeks of my release from hospital.)

During this run down, bone-tired period my husband had been after me regularly to be his date for a '50's dance on the 25th and I had absolutely no inclination to attend. That is, until late on the afternoon of the 25th. I called him as he was almost finished at work stressing how I absolutely and totally wanted to go, 'had' to go, and could he get a babysitter? Stunned by this sudden importance, it was a small miracle that he did manage to get a babysitter and she was one

that we had never used before. The heavy bleeding had stopped suddenly and completely along with the pain. My energy spiked and crested as I tightly curled my hair, exaggerated my eyebrows like Annette Funicello, did my nails and lips in Lucille Ball ruby red, tied a neckerchief around my throat and the shirt-tails of one of Mike's shirts around my waist, rolled up my jeans so my white bobby-socks showed, and he applied Vaseline to his hair and formed the proper Elvis curl at the forehead. What a team! We met up with friends at the dance and were prepared to sing and dance the night away.

The men left us ladies at the table and went off to get refreshments and by the time they returned a while later I was wracked with abdominal pain and couldn't sit up. I could only describe the pain as though being torn in half. I had just lifted my drink to my lips for a sip when I began feeling faint and sick and very soon after the vomiting started. Within one hour of arriving we, with the help of three friends, were hurriedly leaving for home as something was very wrong.

Micheal - I was stumped and scared as I'd never seen my wife change with such extremes, so suddenly, so drastically. I wanted to run her to the hospital immediately but she kept on insisting that she wanted to go home-- that she just needed to rest. We got home and I half-carried her up to our bedroom. The babysitter was really concerned as she thought she was out of a job

but I asked her to remain until I was sure that we wouldn't need her. Within minutes of arriving life got terribly hectic. The vomiting continually worsened; until she was vomiting bile only, then wracked with dry heaves, and had began losing conscientiousness between the bouts of vomiting. I'd been pushing to call for an ambulance but she had kept saying "no" but there came the time that she couldn't focus or remain cognizant long enough to argue. There was no relief for me when she suddenly told me to call the hospital because that only strengthened my sense of foreboding. The ambulance arrived within minutes and her losses of consciousness were becoming more erratic and lasting longer. I asked the babysitter if she could remain and maybe call her folks, as I wouldn't know when we'd be home, until we got home. She said a fearful "okay" and did so.

I followed the ambulance downtown and right into the Emergency arrival area of the North Bay Civic Hospital. Several nurses and the doctor on duty greeted us at the emergency doors with everyone talking at once, exchanging information and stats with the paramedics as my wife was careened through to an Emergency receiving room. We had arrived about 10:15 pm as the night shift was getting ready to change, which meant that no one remained in the x-ray department, no surgeons or surgical staff were on hand and though it seemed that time had come to a standstill, the level of activity and race for time was interminable. Very soon the call

went out for two surgeons, a full surgical staff, and an operating room to be prepared "stat", and now I was scared, as I could see the staff were very upset and in warp drive! They had put me in a room adjacent to the room in which they were working on her, separated by a large window through which I could watch, worry and be a part of, but also be out of the way. At one point a nurse came and brought me to her gurney's side and asked if I could remove her nail polish; a twofold job: one to give me something to do to 'help' and the other so they could keep a check on the coloring under her fingernails. It seemed like forever before they finally came and took her away to surgery. I couldn't figure what the holdup was but to get the surgical team back into the hospital, disinfect the operating room, ready blood transfusions and all else required takes time, which is something that I really didn't feel that Lil had. Anytime a nurse or orderly came into the room, I kept asking them 'WHEN?'

Lilliane - One surgeon arrived, who I later learned was Dr. Johnston, and with the doctor on duty and the nurses in constant motion, noise, needles, IV lines, orders for blood, catheter, oxygen mask, crash cart, all I could feel was bone-deep freezing beyond any cold I'd ever felt accompanied with severe shivering, offset with bouts of full-body flash-sweating and dry mouth. They covered me with heated blankets, soon followed by cool cotton sheets, swiping citrus balm on my lips and wiping me down with cool, damp cloths,

just to be covering me again with heated blankets. This doctor repeatedly asked me the same 3 questions throughout his examination and I remember feeling angry about this and wishing someone would write down my answers for him because with the passing of time, I could no longer remember the answers. I did tell them that Mike would know and he should still be in the waiting room. I'd lost feeling in both arms and legs, most of my memory, my veins had collapsed, the sharp pains had reached my shoulders and neck to the point that I could no longer move my head. The urgency escalated in everyone's voices and actions. (I later learned my organs had shut down.)

At some time during all of this chaos I was told that I was pregnant. Transferred to a wheeled gurney, I heard a doctor tell my husband they'd let him be with me a minute alone. I only remember being so very upset that I was losing another baby ... my husband kept assuring me that the doctors had said it was no longer a baby but tissue and I needed some blood transfusions. I cried for my baby that I instinctively knew had been a girl, and just as suddenly knew I was dying. That didn't bother me.

I'd long since lost the sense of time but was acutely aware of the extreme pain overtaking my body during the shorter and shorter spans of wakefulness. Two O.R. porters accompanied me and saw to my temperature swings and after my begging for

so long for medication, one sympathetically advised that I couldn't be given anything because "we have to keep you with us" and the surgeon shortly finished that with saying that my heart couldn't take it; that they'd give me relief with more pure oxygen as soon as the operating room was clear.

Finally on the operating table, the surgeon asked if I had a message to give anyone special and he'd see to it, but I don't know if I ever answered. The pure oxygen mask was put on and the surgeons had me count backwards from two. (I later learned I'd lost most of my blood due to the rupture of a fallopian tube. From the internal damage, they calculated I was in my 8th-9th week of pregnancy.)

Now begins my journey to "True Life". My limited vocabulary does not contain the words I need to properly convey or depict the clarity and intensity of this experience. My condition worsened considerably, at a rapid rate, and I no longer had the energy or interest to open my eyes. But my hearing was acute. I had become very sensitive to the way my heart was beating, that the beats were spacing further apart and became incomplete beats. I vividly remember my last seven heartbeats. I could hear the guy at my head level getting very upset and doing some cursing each time he had wrongly predicted a beat. I very much wanted to tell him it was okay.

Then my very being was reduced to a very small, heavy, hard, dense, black ball about the size of my tightly-closed fist. I was being pierced with the most severe pains I could only liken to white lightning bolts. I had five of these lightning bolts permeate and I couldn't take any more and wanted to die. I could hear cursing from the anesthesiologist and another male voice and remember asking God to let me die because I just could not take this pain. (I later learned this was during the Defibrillator use and the manual heart massage.)

There came very accelerated and dramatic changes. I was thrust into a new consciousness, a new awareness. Faster than the blink of an eye I was in a very long, wide, dark hallway being drawn toward an open doorway. When I saw the blackness through this doorway I knew fear as no other, for the blackness was one that cannot be replicated here on earth. My fear was so great. I began to fight this force that was drawing me physically. One very precise memory is the urgency I felt upon thinking "if I go, I can't come back to tell them it's okay", and at the doorway I pushed hands and feet (like Garfield in the screen door cartoons) and I yelled out "No, God, No!" (I have to add here that the single word, "them" who I couldn't tell, was instantly naming, by name, all those who loved me and cared about me. It was so rapid yet so individualized.) But once pulled through the doorway I became aware of my new weightless and completely pain-free body

now draped in a toe-length loose-fitting gown, upright and slightly angled forward, moving at an incredible speed but without the sensation of movement, traveling through the dark hallway. I no longer feared this blackness, was at peace in it, nor did I give another thought about dying. I had the "sense" of a body my height, weight and size although I inherently knew it wasn't a physical one.

*I was manifested into daylight as though a light switch had been thrown. I was standing on a high hill overlooking an immense valley, the ever-slightest breeze touching my face, the sky a beautiful soft blue, the sunshine and temperature perfect and as I stood in awe and amazement I became aware that Jesus stood at my right. I **knew** it was Jesus and had no need to turn to see. There is no word to describe this knowing. It was the awed sense of love, comfort, peace, freedom and perfection.*

My senses were the same as here on earth and our communications were not by spoken word but by thought. I came to a hasty realization that I knew everything and I knew all that I could see by name, from the grass I was standing on to the far reaches of the horizon. I knew each blade of grass, rock, tree, all the leaves of the trees, every flower, bird ... and knew what was beyond my sight stretching out into the universe, when, as sudden as the thought had come to me that I knew everything in creation, I recognized and

acknowledged to Jesus that He knew so much more and I thanked Him for this wondrous gift. As we spoke I noticed how strikingly clear the air was, the colors, hues and vividness of everything and perceived that everything there was also acknowledging me in coexistence; that there was intelligence, solemn joy, calm and quiet power, and peace in all things. There existed no limits here. There was no sense of time. Everything was pure and serene and accepting. I also knew that this was not heaven and Jesus instantly responded that it was a welcome, a preparation. I was entirely saturated in love and thought I was there to stay. The last thing I remember Jesus saying to me was "You will come home again."

Micheal- My wife had been in surgery for four hours and this whole time I was kept in a waiting room, just worried sick. I don't think that I did anything other than pray that God would spare her and bring her back to me. Finally, later, about 4 a.m. I saw a very tired doctor approaching me in scrubs. Drained of energy, this African American doctor was pale and very stressed looking. He told me that they'd had to resuscitate Lil twice and also had to give her heart massage. He said that she had suffered an ectopic (I had no idea what that was at the time), or tubal pregnancy. She had miscarried; the tube had ruptured and almost bled her out internally. Her abdominal cavity was filled with the blood! He told me Lil had made it, but just barely, and that if she were ever to get

pregnant again there was a 90% chance that any baby would not make it, and a 70- 80% chance that she (Lil) would die. He made a very strong recommendation that I get an immediate vasectomy to avoid further chances.

I finally got home about 5:00 a.m. and the poor babysitter was sound asleep on our couch so I left her there and took her home around 7:00 when our son was up and about. I explained that Mom had gotten very sick and had to stay in the hospital for a few days.

Lilliane- My next memory is the impact of my spirit rejoining my physical body on a cold hard bed. My entire body jerked and splayed and though my eyes flew open for just an instant I saw the nurse at my bed rail being startled, saw all the details of what she was wearing, I knew there was another nurse working with an IV bag behind the head of my bed and another nurse was in a little room watching the monitors ... and that "I was back". I was placed in an induced coma for 3 days. The first thing I saw through eyelashes of barely opened eyes was Micheal sitting there pale, tired, with a despondent demeanor, and hunched shoulders. As the fog cleared during the following days I don't think I ever said "Hi, Hon" but jumped right into a litany of questions to Micheal about what the doctors said to him about my dying. The passing of time has allowed me to see the humor in the poor man's facial expression, although at the time it was a desperate

question. With alertness came the hardship of trying to deal with the lost pregnancy, the amazement of my hilltop visit and the sorrow of so rapidly losing the vast knowledge I'd had in Jesus' presence. I had so wanted to stay there and regretted being returned to a heavy, pain-wracked and burdensome body. There was a certainty that this, too, was part of His plan for my life. Even through all those times of depression that followed I knew this to be true. I can't say that it helped me during the early years but it did sustain me.

Micheal- When they began lessening her drugs and oxygen to bring her out of the induced coma I began bringing our son in as this long absence from his Mom was hard on him and on the off-chance she had any awareness, she would get much relief in seeing him. It was Monday evening of November 28 that she first spoke, quite confused, weak and apprehensive. Sometime during the next day or two, her first question was a "mindful one" that so shocked me; she asked if she had died on the table and wanted to know what the doctors had told me about it. She peppered me with questions to ask the doctor as soon as I could, and made statements in between to the point where I was overwhelmed. She wanted to know how long she had been dead, what had happened during that time, and started spilling out details of hearing my voice very near her head in the operating room. She said the meaning of this person sounding like mine was letting her know that I was there with her

and that her son would be okay with me. Splatters of memories followed: someone desperately cursing because her heart wasn't beating right; the beeping sounds of a machine very near her; her last seven heartbeats and how surprised she was that they sounded opposite of what she thought they would be (the length of the thumps were reversed); wanting to die to escape the extraordinary pain; yelling "No, God, No" upon seeing the darkness (and wondered if she'd actually yelled out in the operating room, and if so, she must have scared them a bit); about having changed her mind about wanting to die because she couldn't come back to tell everybody it was okay; I heard about her speeding through a black hallway in a new body; being in the presence of and speaking with Jesus; instantly appearing into beautiful daylight near the edge of a very high cliff; the joy and the peace; the beauty of it all; the great knowledge she'd had.

I couldn't take it all in and knew I wouldn't be able to remember everything she wanted me to ask the doctor. So at one point I could only hold her hands and explain she had to talk to the doctor directly -- that I'd leave a message at the nurse's station for him to come and discuss all of this. This was the most monumental series of things I'd ever heard and just didn't know what to do with it all. She needed answers to her questions and was frustrated with not knowing where to look or who to ask. Some times were difficult for me as I could only support her in spirit but

couldn't be of any concrete help. This was way out of my realm. We didn't know of anyone who had ever gone through such a thing.

Only because she was continually asking each doctor once or twice per day to go home, was she discharged on December 6th with a long list of very strict instructions regarding do's and don'ts. She gradually healed as expected but she did not return to her former mental and emotional state. She was greatly depressed during her weakened state and for many years wasn't able to get past the void she felt. Her first visits and discussions with the main surgeon in the weeks following her release covered much information and verified her death for a short time, which did help her deal with it.

Shortly after her return home, I booked myself in for a vasectomy. In no way could I have ever lived without Lil. She was my everything and although we would both have loved to have had a child together I was selfish and did not ever want to risk losing her again. It was wrong of me and of the military to authorize it, but after I explained the special circumstances, in particular her depression, the doctors approved it without the need to consult Lil, which would have been the normal procedure. I still don't honestly regret that decision; just that I did it without her knowledge or approval, but I knew that if she had been involved she would never have permitted me to do so. I prepared

to deal with her anger, hurt, disappointment, and sense of betrayal but I understood and accepted that, though it would not deter my decision.

Lilliane- Who is God? What is God? I now know God is Pure Love. I've since known that God literally does know the number of hairs on every head and that he cares for each and every detail of His creation. It was very clear that no fault, weakness or sin of mine could affect His love and that His love is truly eternal. We are not just, figuratively speaking, His little children: we ARE His children. If Jesus came today and said He wanted to give our child, parent, brother, sister or spouse His knowledge, love, power, comfort, peace, warmth, purity of heart and soul, a special seat beside Him ... who would reject Him? We mourn earthly loss, to be sure, but must carry faith in God's promise to hold us gently and lovingly and forever. We cannot comprehend time as forever, world without end or eternity but we have to seek the changes in our heart to learn God's will and take Him at His Word. To trust His Word. I deserve no right to enter heaven but God's grace and mercy will happily carry me in. Mary, too, His mother, will give the courage to change and to help prepare for this glorious new life with her most beloved Son. She knows suffering and is no stranger to grief and loss.

Jesus showed me only a small portion of what we were created for and made it clear

that we are truly wanted there with Him. Believe. Trust. Pray every day. Prepare and make your goal to be right with God”.

When Lil first told me about her experience, I knew that she had experienced something wonderful and very unusual. As she recalled and told me the details of her dying and then being in the presence of Jesus she became radiant. The lustre of her face was glowing. It became bright and shining.

August 8, 2008: 08-08-08

Some calendar dates one just never forgets. Your birthday, the day you parents may have passed away, the day you met your love mate the date you became engaged or married, the day a child is born, the day one of your children or your spouse passed away are examples of what are important dates in ones life time. Others like the attacks on U.S.A. targets of 911 will be remembered by anyone alive at that time. August 8, 2008 or 08-08-08 is a date that will not easily be forgotten by a lovely lady, her family and her circle of friends.

This lady was diagnosed with metastasised cancer in May of 2008. When first diagnosed, the x-ray and bone scan images indicated that the cancer was in her sacrum. Treatment included various chemotherapies and x-ray. Nothing seemed to slow the spread of the cancer. By August the cancer had spread and was now found in L5,

the sacrum, the tail bone, both hips and three ribs in total there were now ten (10) cancerous spots. This lady on August 8, 2008 or 08-08-08 asked her Oncologist what her life expectancy might be the response was “perhaps two years”.

The Oncologist suggested that there was another Chemotherapy Paclitaxel (Abraxane) she might try but first she would have to apply to the provincial government for funding. The application was made, funding was granted and treatment commenced. Meanwhile a number of persons right across Western Canada, family, friends, Christians were praying to their God that this lady would be cured. Recent bone scans, Pet scans and Ct scans have indicated no new cancers have developed and those ten (10) known to exist from previous images are described as being inactive. At the time of publishing she has survived well beyond the expected two years.

Was the growth of the cancer slowed down and stopped by the Chemotherapy treatment or was it a result of her God intervening? Perhaps it was a combination of both. If you ask the question, this lady will very quickly tell you it was her God who intervened and is very quick to praise and thank Him.

If you have not already guessed who the above lady might be, she is Susan my wife of almost 52 years.

Other Books of Angelic Visitations and/or Miracles Happening:

In another interesting book *The Gift of Angels: Inspirational encounter with God's Heavenly Messengers*: Zondervan: there are 24 stories of persons who strongly feel they have had angelic visitations.

In his book, "Angels: Ringing Assurance that we Are Not Alone": Billy Graham provides us with many other examples of persons who have had unusual experiences that perhaps were angelic visits.

In their book "Angels Among Us": Pacific Press Publishing Association, E. Lonnie Melashenko with Brian Jones, also provide us with a collection of 23 stories of unusual experiences persons have had. They contribute these to being angelic visitations.

Fr. Coughill in his book "He's Alive Volume 11 provides us with an additional 23 incidents of persons having unusual experiences that can only be attributed to angelic visitations or miracles performed.

There are many more books available outlining personal experiences that just simply cannot be explained by conventional means.

Persons experiencing unusual events or who have healing experiences which seem to be beyond medical explanation seem to be unique to Christianity. If this is happening to

the followers of other religions I am not aware of it. I have never read of such experiences in any other religion. Perhaps they are not being recorded or I have simply just not found where they are recorded. Another aspect of Christianity unique to it is Sainthood.

Sainthood:

Protestant theology teaches that every person who believes in Jesus Christ and has accepted Him as their personal Savior becomes at that moment a saint. They base this on the New Testament Biblical verse, 1st Corinthians chapter 1 verse two. It read as follows: “Unto the church of God which is at Corinth, to them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus called to be saints” (KJV). For this reason Protestants believe the number of saints are innumerable and cannot be counted.

Within Catholicism the process the church uses to name a saint is known as canonization. “There are over 10,000 named saints and beati from history, from Roman martyrology and Orthodox sources but no definitive head count” (www.Catholiconline).

The nature of canonization includes a rigorous investigation into the deceased life. To be declared a saint there must be evidence of at least two miracles. Perhaps it is worthwhile examining this process to which Pope John Paul 11 in 1983 made sweeping changes (*Divinus Perfectionis Magister*). The

process now in place reduced to its simplest form is as follows:

- (1) After the death of a Catholic whom people consider holy the local bishop investigates the candidate's life.
- (2) If reasonable evidence is found to consider that the person is holy, the bishop presents it to a panel of theologians at the Vatican.
- (3) If this panel gives its approval they then present their findings to the Cardinals of the Congregation for the causes of saints, who examine the evidence and the pope proclaims the candidate venerable.
- (4) The next step "beautification" requires proof of 1 miracle (exception is for martyrs).
- (5) After proof of the second miracle, the Pope canonizes and the person becomes a saint.

Thus the universal church recognizes what God has already done. Persons Canonized in recent memory are: Mother Teresa, Brother Andre Bessette, the doorman of Notre Dame College, Montreal who is credited with curing the ill and the handicap conditions of hundreds of persons. Brother Andre who at birth was very tiny and sickly throughout his life lived to be an amazing age of 91 years, and Karol Wojtyla perhaps better known to you as Pope John Paul 11.

Chapter Two: Bible Mysteries:

The Christian Holy Book is The Bible. I present the development and history of the Bible later in Part Two: Chapter Eleven: The Bible contains curious customs, and names of strange Gods, stories of miracles performed, stories that the human mind cannot grasp, gaps and mysteries. Everyone loves a mystery and perhaps the greatest mysteries of all time are located between the covers of the Bible. In the very first verse of the Bible there are a number of mysteries. These mysteries can be identified in question form. The first verse reads” **In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth**”. What or who is God? Does God have an origin? If so, what is the origin of that origin? If we could keep going back an infinite number of times would we eventually find something beginning from nothing? What was there before the beginning? When and where was the beginning? From what did God create the heavens and the earth? Then in verse 26 of the first chapter there are again a number of mysteries. This verse reads “**Then God said let us make man in our image**” Who was God speaking to? At that time in the presence of God was there only male beings? Does the term man, refer to mankind or only to a male of the human race? In chapter 4 verse 17 we are told that “**Cain lay with his wife**” Where did Cain get his wife from? Mysteries similar to these continue throughout the Bible. Why are we left to ponder them? Perhaps it was intentional to kick start our inquisitive minds.

These Biblical enigmas fascinate us and make us curious to learn more. The Bible has two sections. (1) The Old Testament made up of ancient historical writings, prophecies, and rules of conduct. It is a mystery to us how the Biblical prophets could have known and foretold accurately of futuristic events. In some cases hundreds of years elapsed from when the prophecy was made until the prophesied event happened. (2) The New Testament contains writings that date back some two thousand years. Some of its authors were eye witnesses to the miracles performed and the teaching of the man known as Jesus Christ. The Old Testament contains all the prophecies pertaining to Jesus, his birth place, his genealogy, where he would live, his ministry, his sacrificial death for the forgiveness of our sins, his resurrection by God from the dead and his ascension into heaven. These prophecies are scattered throughout almost every book of the Bible's Old Testament. However, nowhere in the Bible is this more prevalent than in Isaiah chapter 53. Isaiah devotes almost this entire chapter to the futuristic Jesus and his suffering and death on a cross for the forgiveness of our sins. We know that Isaiah began prophesying in 740BC and died in 681BC. This fact indicates that some of the prophecies he made regarding Jesus were made more than 700 years before the birth of Jesus. The mystery here, is how Isaiah could have written such a vivid description of the birth, life and death of Jesus without his God having enlightened him? The Old Testament

prophecies that I have found (there maybe many more) regarding Jesus are presented in the last chapter of this book

The New Testament continues on with the “Christology” (the Jesus’ story) and then adds the prophecies of the “end times” when the resurrected Jesus will return to earth and claim his Kingdom. This mysterious event, mysterious in the sense that, know one knows when this will happen, is often referred to as “The Second Coming” or “The Second Advent” and according to Biblical Scripture, only God knows the hour and day this will happen. The first four books of the New Testament: the Gospels: contain the complete genealogy, the complete life story including the style and subject material of Jesus’ ministry. It not only contains historical writings, prophecies and rules of conduct but also explains what a person must do to prepare their soul for eternity.

Embodied within the Bible are the consequences of rejecting God. It is separation from God, eternal torment and damnation for sinners (unbelievers). This place is referred to as Hell and will not be a pleasant experience. The Bible also teaches that mankind can avoid this separation from God and can be the recipients of God’s wonderful and everlasting love and salvation. Salvation as I understand it within the Christian doctrine is that a believer’s soul will live forever, and abide with God in God’s Heavenly abode. The Christian belief is that

this salvation, the forgiveness of one's sins by God was attained by Jesus Christ through His sacrificial death on the cross and His resurrection from the dead. What one must do to obtain salvation has not been addressed within the contents of this book however; it is clearly outlined within the Bible's New Testament's first four (4) books. Interested? I suggest you also seek an audience with a clergyman or speak to a Christian acquaintance.

The Christian belief, that the Bible is the word of God, stems primarily from the fact that it has endured for thousands of years while its theme has remained unchanged. The Old Testament of the Bible provides us with the story of creation, the origin of sin, prophecies, God's law, and His plan for the redemption of man's soul. The books of the New Testament describe the fulfillment of God's plan. The theme of both the Old and the New Testaments points to the coming of Jesus Christ and that all history will be eventually consummated by Him.

Some of the passages quoted within this document, taken from the books of the New Testament, particularly those of Matthew, Mark and John are believed to be eyewitness accounts.

Chapter Three: Christianity:

“I advise you leave these men alone! Let them go! For if their purpose or activity is of human origin, it will fail. But if it is from God, you will not be able to stop these men; you will only find yourself fighting against God”. These words were spoken by a man named Gamaliel about two thousand years ago when he was addressing the leaders of the Jews regarding what should be done with a small band of men and women they had arrested and who were the followers of Jesus Christ. This small group has grown to become known in today’s world as Christianity, the world’s most populous religion.

The teachings of Jesus of Nazareth some two thousand years ago inspired this movement (Christianity) consisting mostly of very simple people, and because of persecution, these people were scattered. In some cases individuals fled to other towns, or other countries, while in other cases groups of people fled and settled together. Over the following centuries some individuals and also some groups split away from the teachings of Jesus and have become religious organizations. This fact remains true today.

The Christian Biblical account, reduced to its simplest form is: Jesus Christ the son of God was born to Joseph and Mary Jewish parents from Nazareth, in the town of Bethlehem. The birth took place while Joseph and Mary were there to be counted in a census

that was taking place at the time. The Bible's story of Jesus from the time of his birth until he started his ministry at approximately age 30 is scarce. However, the first four books of the Bible's New Testament commonly referred to as "The Gospels" give us a comprehensive and detailed account of his birth, his ministry, his death and according to the Gospel writers his resurrection from the dead. Throughout the Old Testament the prophets foretold of a coming Messiah, who would be sent by God to be born of a virgin, have a teaching and healing ministry, be falsely accused, be crucified and then be raised from the dead and ascend into Heaven. Christian followers of Christ's teachings believe that these prophecies were fulfilled by Jesus Christ. At some futuristic time they believe he is to return to earth to become King and rule the world for a thousand years from his throne in Jerusalem after that period of time, the present heaven and earth would be replaced by a new heavenly home.

The number of Christian's world wide has increased from a few followers at the time of the death of Jesus to become today the world's largest religion. From Biblical writings regarding Christ's life, ministry and death, Christians believe Jesus is the son of God sent to earth to become fully man whose sacrificial death on a cross was for the forgiveness of sin as predicted in the Bible's Old Testament. The Christian belief will be addressed and perhaps more fully explained

later, particularly in the Apostle Creed and the Nicene Creed.

Today, we do not have one artifact that can be traced to having belonged to Jesus Christ unless it is "The Shroud of Turin". We do however know the birth place of his mother Mary and the house she was born in. Also preserved is his birth place, where he lived in Nazareth with Joseph and Mary. Many biblical places named during his ministry exist today or at the very least we know where they are located. Some lie in ruins while others are still populated and are thriving communities. Also known after his arrest is the prison cave he was held in, the location where his trial took place, the route he took through the streets of Jerusalem to Calvary, the place where he was crucified and his burial place. The Bible not only provides us with all of the above it also gives us his genealogy. However, it does not give us the exact date of his birth. Only clues are provided to the date he was born. We are told that his birth took place during the reign of Herod. Herod ruled from 37 until 4BC.

Outside of the writers of the Gospels there are no other eye witness accounts of Jesus' existence. If there are any, I have no knowledge of them. Leland M. Haines, when writing about the historical Jesus Christ, tells us one of the Roman Emperors either Tiberius (14-37AD) or Claudius (41-54AD) issued an edict against grave robbing. He tells us that the inscription of it was found in Nazareth.

The edict provides a penalty of death to anyone caught grave robbing. Presumably this was issued after the body of Jesus Christ disappeared from the tomb that it was placed in. The biblical account of this incident the empty tomb is when some of Jesus' followers went to his tomb on the Sunday immediately following his death, except for his burial clothes and an angel, the tomb was empty. (Please reference The New Testament books of Matthew chapter 28, Mark chapter 16 and Luke chapter 24 verses 1-12).

Publius (or Garius) Cornelius Tacitus a Roman historian born 56AD died 117AD mentions Jesus. Tacitus is known to have written at least 16 books. In his *Annals* Book 15 (44) when writing about the burning of Rome Tacitus writes: "*Nero fastened the guilt and inflicted the most exquisite tortures on a class hated for their abominations, called Christians of the populace. Christus, from whom the name had its origin, suffered the extreme penalty during the reign of Tiberius at the hands of one of his procurators, Pontius Pilatus and a most mischievous superstition, thus checked for the moment, again broke out not only in Judaea, the first source of the evil, but even in Rome*" (Alfred John Church and William Jackson Brodriff translation of 1864-1877) Tacitus devotes the balance of 44 to name and describe the horrible tortures that were inflicted upon the early Christians.

Josephus, a Jewish historian, also commented about a man named Jesus. His comments are noted later. Other non Christian historians who mention Jesus and Christians are: Pliny, governor of Bithynia (112AD); Emperor Trajan; Lucian, a 2nd century Greek; and Suctonius a 2nd century Roman historians. Later when we examine Christian persecutions their comments will be addressed. The fact these people wrote about Jesus lends credibility to his existence and brings us back to the two initial questions. Is there a God and who is this Jesus Christ of Nazareth?

The Christian's Bible is laced with prophecies. It contains more than a thousand. The difficult thing about Biblical prophecies is to ascertain exactly when they were written. I have some degree of confidence that the Biblical books containing these prophecies are accurately dated. Professors La Sor, Hubbard and Bush in their book "Old Testament Survey" suggest possible dates for some of the books of the Bible's Old Testament. They date Genesis as early as 1400BC with Malachi, the last one, being written around 450BC with the final revision being made around 150BC. They also suggest on page 22 that these were the books that Jesus used and referred to in his teachings.

Having researched Christian and non-Christian historical documents and books I tried to determine if all or any of the biblical prophecies were actually fulfilled. Here

fulfilled meaning the prophecy actually happened. In succeeding chapters I identify a prophecy or prophecies and then try to determine whether or not the event happened. **You might be surprised at what my research determined.**

The Christian Belief:

Christians who are followers of Jesus Christ believe in God and that Jesus Christ is his son. Christian's world wide in 2008 AD numbered about 2.9 billion. They argue that God exists and that God created the universe including the earth, mankind and everything upon and in the earth. Christianity has two major themes: the belief in Jesus Christ that he is the son of God: and the teaching of Jesus on how one should live their life and how to obtain eternal life for your soul.

The purpose of this book is to prove the existence of the God that followers of the religion of Christianity believe in. The followers of Judaism who number approximately 14 million believe in the same God as the Christians do, therefore the reasons for their belief will also be examined extensively throughout this book

The Christian belief as I understand it is: Christians believe in one and only one God who created all that is in the heavens and on the earth, including man. Their God is triune: God the Father, God the Son (Jesus) and God the Holy Spirit. They believe that God created

man with free will and with a soul that will live forever. Man sinned and fell from God's grace. Then, for the forgiveness of our sins (yours and mine) God gave his only son Jesus Christ who was born of a virgin, was crucified dead and buried, descended into hell and that by the power of God, he arose from the dead on the third day and ascended to Heaven. Christians believe that sometime in the future Jesus will return to earthly rule and will judge both the living and the souls of those who have already died. Christians also believe that the Bible is the word of God and that these writings were divinely inspired by God. The Christian belief that the Bible is the word of God is strongly supported by the fact that it has endured for centuries. The Bible, its history and what is contained within its pages will be addressed later in Section Two: Chapter Eleven: entitled "The Holy Books".

Perhaps the Christian belief can best be explained and there by better understood by quoting their Nicene Creed developed during the 4th century AD and their Apostles Creed developed during the 6th century AD. The following is the current wording of the Nicene and Apostles' Creed revised by the Catholic Church and put into practice November 2011.

The Nicene Creed:

I believe in one God, the Father almighty, maker of heaven and earth, of all things visible and invisible. I believe in one Lord Jesus Christ, the only begotten Son of God,

born of the father before all ages, God from God, Light from Light, true God from true God, begotten, not made, consubstantial with the Father: through him all things were made. For us men and for our salvation he came down from heaven, and by the Holy Spirit was incarnate of the Virgin Mary, and became man. For our sake he was crucified under Pontius Pilate, he suffered death and was buried, and rose again on the third day in accordance with the scriptures. He ascended into heaven and is seated at the right hand of the Father. He will come again in glory to judge the living and the dead and his kingdom will have no end. I believe in the Holy Spirit, the Lord, the giver of life, who proceeds from the Father and the Son, who with the father and the Son is adored and glorified, who has spoken through the Prophets. I believe in one, holy, catholic and apostolic Church. I confess one Baptism for the forgiveness of sins and I look forward to the resurrection of the dead, and the life of the world to come. Amen.

The Apostles' Creed:

I believe in God, the Father almighty, Creator of heaven and earth, and in Jesus Christ, his only son, our Lord, who was conceived by the Holy Spirit, born of the Virgin Mary, suffered under Pontius Pilate, was crucified, died and was buried; he descended into hell; on the third day he rose again from the dead; he ascended into heaven, and is seated at the right hand of God the Father almighty; from there he will come to

judge the living and the dead. I believe in the Holy Spirit, the holy Catholic Church, the communion of saints, the forgiveness of sins, the resurrection of the body, and life everlasting. Amen.

The Teaching of Jesus:

The writers of the Bible's New Testament have compiled an impressive list of how one is to live their life. They offered these, suggesting that this is from the teacher Jesus. These beatitudes or commandments include the following: Love one another. Be charitable generously providing for the poor. Visit people imprisoned. Provide care to the sick. Be sensitive to the needs of widows and children and provide them with the necessities of life. Do not steal. Do not kill. Do not commit adultery. Refrain from bearing false witness always telling the truth. Don't be jealous of what others may have and do not become angry and above all believe in the love of God. Professors La Sor, Hubbard and Bush on page four of their book "Old Testament Survey" present the teaching of Jesus as follows: *"doing God's will is the highest good: immorality, idolatry, inhumanity and spiritual rebellion are to be shunned: honesty, integrity, diligence and concern for the rights and needs of others are valued as sterling and admirable qualities."*

Before presenting the life and times of Jesus and prior to examining the development of the written language, Biblical prophecies

and whether or not they have been fulfilled, I should like to put forward in the next chapter, notable quotations about God, Jesus Christ and the Christian Bible. I consider all those mentioned there to be of far greater intellect than myself.

Chapter: Four: What some notables have said about God, The Bible and Jesus Christ:

The Greek Plato (428-347BC) in his dialogue Timaeus near the beginning on his discussion on how the Creator fashioned the world we read: *“and the creator, reflecting on the things which are by nature visible, found that no unintelligent creature taken as a whole could be fairer than the intelligent taken as a whole, and again that intelligence could not be present in anything which was devoid of a soul. For which reason, when he was framing the universe, he put intelligence in soul, and soul in body, that he might be the creator of a work which was by nature fairest and best. On this wise, using the language of probability, we may say that the world came into being- a living creature truly endowed with soul and intelligence by the providence of God”*.

“At first laying down, as a fact fundamental, that nothing with God can be accidental”. Henry Woodsworth Longfellow.

“The Nazarene sect - the Jews who had accepted Jesus as the Messiah promised by God, - had given him the name Christ, which is Greek for Messiah. As His followers increased they gradually began to be called Christians”. Sulamith Ish-Kishor; Jewish author and historian.

“In this century alone (20th) there have been more than 60,000 books written and published about Jesus”. Haim Cohn: Author and Supreme Court Justice State of Israel.

“About the same time came Jesus, a wise man, if one can call him a man at all. For he was a performer of miracles and the teacher of all men, who received the truth with joy. He attracted many Jews and many Greeks. He was the Christ. Pilate sentenced him to die on the cross, having been urged to do so by the noblest of our citizens; but his followers did not forsake him, for he appeared to them on the third day, being alive again, just as God-sent prophets had predicted this and a thousand other miracles concerning him. And up to now the people of the Christians, who are named after him, have not disappeared.”

Josephus, Flavius a famous Jewish historian in his Antiquities of Jews 18.3.3. (Authors note: Flavius Josephus' father, Joseph Matthias was a Pharisee. Josephus was born around 37AD and died perhaps as late as 101AD. He was also known as Yosef Ben Natityahu and after becoming a Roman citizen as Titus Flavius Josephus. We know that initially he was involved in the Jewish revote against Rome and for that reason and for the detailed account that he wrote concerning the events at Masada some theologians and historians suggest that he was the last man standing at Masada when it fell to the Romans in 73AD. In his account of these events he gives us the detailed dialogue between the Jewish commander and the residents of Masada. How could this be unless he was there? Additionally my thoughts are if Josephus was not at Masada when it fell to the Romans then his account of this event is total fabrication and how much more of his historical writings may have also been fabrication of his mind. It should also be noted that

some historians suggest that Josephus' style of writing does not match what is offered above as being from him).

Dag Hammarskjöld, former secretary-general of the United Nations when talking about God said: *"I don't know Who -- or what -- put the question, I don't know when it was put, I don't even remember answering. But at some moment I did answer Yes to Someone -- or Something - and from that hour I was certain that existence is meaningful and that, therefore, my life ... had a goal"*.

Will Durant in his Book *Caesar and Christ* on page 554 asks the question: *"What evidence is there for Christ's existence? The earliest non-Christian reference occurs in Josephus' Antiquities of the Jews"* He then goes on to quote Josephus (although different verbiage is used the theme remains constant) as follows: *"at that time lived Jesus, a holy man, if man he may be called, for he performed wonderful works and taught many men, and joyfully received the truth. And he was followed by many Jews and many Greeks. He was the Messiah"*. Durant then goes on to explain *"that such high praise coming from a Jew renders the passage suspect"* He then continues by suggesting these references prove the existence of Christians rather than of Christ. Additionally on page 555 Durant states that Thallus a middle of the first century pagan argued that the abnormal darkness alleged to have accompanied the death of Christ was a purely natural phenomenon and coincidence: the argument

*took the existence of Christ for granted”
(Please reference Matthew chapter 27
beginning at verse 45 for the account of this
darkness).*

*“Everyone who is seriously interested in
the pursuit of science becomes convinced, that
a spirit (God) is manifest in the laws of the
universe – a spirit vastly superior to man, and
one in the face of which our modest powers
must feel humble”* Dr. Albert Einstein. (Author
note: Perhaps what Dr. Einstein is suggesting is there is
so much harmony in the universe that some force must
be controlling it. For instance our moon has been
eclipsing our planet earth while we have been eclipsing
our sun for thousand of years without the slightest
change in our eclipsing paths. Meanwhile our sun and
in fact the Milky Way our Galaxy that we are part of,
has been travelling through space at a speed of 43,920
miles per hour for thousands upon thousands of years
without colliding with other galaxies. It is this
harmony that permits astrologers to calculate when
heavenly events are about to happen or when they last
happened. For example Halley’s Comet has been
known to exist since at least 240BC. It last appeared to
us in 1986AD and will reappear in our sky in the year
2061AD. The Hale Bopp comet appeared in our sky in
1997, its previous appearance was 4,200 years before
that and will not be again visible to us until the year
4377AD. During the late evening hours of December
20th and early morning hours of December 21st 2010
here in North America we experienced a total eclipse
of the moon. What is unusual about this event is that it
occurred on the winter solstice. The last time a total
lunar eclipse took place on a winter solstice was in
1638AD and will not take place again until the year
2401AD. It is interesting to note that Dawkins in his
book “The God Delusion” puts forward the argument
that Dr. Einstein was an atheist. I am sure this
statement was put forward on account of Dr. Einstein
being quoted as saying “I don’t believe God is an old

man with a white beard” and posed to his assistant Ernst Straus the question “ Did God have any choice when he created the universe”.

“Goodbye I’ll see you in Heaven.” John D. Rockefeller, Sr.

“I believe the Bible is the best gift God has ever given to man.” Abraham Lincoln.

“It is impossible to rightly govern the world without God and the Bible.” George Washington.

“The New Testament is the very best book that ever was or ever will be known to the world.” Charles Dickens.

“There are more sure marks of authenticity in the Bible than in any profane history”. Sir Isaac Newton.

“I always think that the best way to know God is to love many things” Vincent Van Gogh.

“I shall hear in Heaven” Beethoven.

“In Christianity, split as it is in many parts, and held with many different minds, two constant, vigorous facts may be observed: the inspiring nature of the Gospels (the first 4 books of the New Testament) and the consciousness of the reality of Jesus.”
“Biblical archaeology and studies of early Palestine have uncovered nothing

unequivocally related to Jesus himself”: The Illustrated Columbia Encyclopedia.

“As a Man, He lived the most strangely Beautiful Life ever known. He was the Kindest, Tenderest, Gentlest, most Patient, most sympathetic man that ever lived. He loved people. He hated to see people in trouble. He loved to forgive. He loved to help. He wrought marvelous miracles to feed hungry people.” Dr. Henry H Halley, author, lecturer and Minister of the Bible.

“The life of Jesus Christ is indelibly engraved upon history; neither the erosion of time nor the devastating and compounding effects of evil have been able to erase his influence. He was condemned as a criminal, yet his life and teachings reverberate throughout history. He is the single greatest agent of change in human history”: Matthew Kelly; author.

“Man has a soul” “The strength of a community can only arise out of an “I-Thou relationship with God”. Martin Buber: writer: Professor of Social Philosophy Hebrew University Jerusalem.

“All the choir of heaven and furniture of earth, in a word all those bodies which compose the mighty frame of the world, have not any substance without the mind.... So long as they are not actually perceived by me, or do not exist in my mind, or that of any other created spirit, they must either have no

existence at all, or else subsist in the mind of some eternal Spirit”: A Berkeley.

“The hard fact is that the other ancient Near eastern religions have disappeared while the biblical religion remains—a survival most likely explained by the distinctive qualities of Biblical religion”. Professors: la Sor, Hubbard and Bush.

“These are the divine doctrines of the Essens about the soul, which lay an unavoidable bait for such as once had a taste of philosophy. There are among them who undertake to foretell things to come, by reading holy books, and by using several sorts of purifications, and being perpetually conversant in the discourses of the Prophets: and it is seldom that they miss in their predictions”. Josephus Wars of the Jews Book 11 viii, 2-14. Josephus is here referring to the Jewish religious sect at Qumran the place where the Dead Sea scrolls were found. These persons were unshakeable in their belief that God exists.

Alfred Lord Tennyson wrote *“God’s finger touched him and he slept”* and *“More things have been wrought by prayer than this world dreams of”*

‘Some of the biggest cases of mistaken identity are among intellectuals who have trouble remembering that they are not God’. Thomas Sowell.

The above recorded comments made by notable persons do not prove the existence of God. They do however indicate their belief in a Supreme Being who Christians refer to as God and his son Jesus Christ. This then leads to an examination of Jesus' life as presented in the Christian holy book the Bible.

Chapter Five: The Life and Times of Jesus:

Biblical Prophecies relating to Jesus:

Many of the Biblical prophecies contained in the Bible pertaining to Jesus were made centuries before His birth. The prophecies regarding Jesus in the Bible's first book of Genesis may have been made more than 1400 years before he was born.

Today, there are theologians and historians who date Moses who is credited with writing (dictating) the first five books of the Bible to around 1200BC. There are however, others who date Moses to a much earlier date and placing his death in 1406BC.

Those favouring the later date of 1200BC base their conclusions on the fact that the first five books of the Bible credited to Moses are obviously written by more than one person. I cannot disagree with this statement. They claim there are at least four primary sources: they are abbreviated as J. (Yahwist), E. (Elohist), (P. Priestly) and D. for Deuteronomistic. The Yahwist prefers to call God Yahweh, the Elohist prefers to call God Elohim, and the priestly writer emphasizes genealogies while the Deuteronomistic writer is more concerned with principles and worship. They may have also based their conclusions on the archaeological work at Jericho by Kathleen Kenyon. I personally favour the

earlier date and have presented in Chapter 14 the various methodologies, mathematical equations, archaeological discoveries and assumptions as to how I and others arrived at our conclusions.

The writers of “The Time Chart of Biblical History” suggest that the final revision of the Pentateuch, the first five books of the Old Testament occurred prior to 600BC. Professors La Sor, Hubbard and Bush in their book “Old Testament Survey” on page nineteen suggest that these five books date to at least 1,000BC, with Genesis dating to 1,400BC and suggest that minor revisions may have taken place until around 400BC. They also suggest with certainty that final editing of the Old Testament occurred before 150BC. If so, then any prophecy made in the Old Testament concerning Jesus was made and recorded on or before that date.

In the Old and New Testament God presents His plan for mankind. The Old Testament points us toward Jesus, the New Testament documents that he existed at or before creation, who he is, his genealogy, his birth, his ministry and his death and resurrection for the forgiveness of the sins of mankind and that someday in the future he will return to earth to his prophesied Kingly rule.

Embodied within the books of the Bible we have found recorded in more than (697) places at least seventy (70) statements and

prophecies about Jesus. His ancestral line, who He is, where He was to be born, where He would live, how and what He would teach, His parable and healing ministry, events leading up to His betrayal and trial, His suffering, His last words and death on a cross, His entombment and that He would be by the power of God resurrected from the dead for the forgiveness of sin. Based on Biblical and other various historical writings Christians believe that all except the last two (2) of these prophecies, (HIS SECOND ADVENT & THE SUPREME JUDGE) were fulfilled by Jesus and that eventually the last two will also be consummated by Him.

The writers of the first four books of the New Testament relay to us in detail the life story of Jesus beginning with his ancestral line from the family of Shem, his life, his ministry, his death and resurrection and ending with the prophecy of the destruction of the temple in Jerusalem.

The above referenced statements and prophecies regarding Jesus make up the entire last chapter of this book Chapter Eighteen. Here, for ease of researching, the scripture verses are listed in order of appearance in each book of the Bible, 1st the Old Testament books Genesis through Malachi and then the New Testament books Matthew through Revelations.

Generally the prophecy is contained in the Old Testament writings with the fulfillment

being found in the New Testament verses. In Luke 24:27 we read the account of where Jesus explains to the Disciples, everything that had been written about him and for this reason it has been included in most if not all subtitles relating to the prophecies which are listed in the last chapter of this book..

Only the serious Biblical student or other interested persons needs to examine each prophecy, statement and where it is found in the Bible. Others may choose to read only the prophecy. Christians, believing that Jesus Christ is who he said he was, believe these prophecies have been or are being fulfilled by Him.

There are prophecies/statements included in the Old Testament regarding Jesus that simply cannot be verified. Examples being that he existed before creation that his mother Mary was a virgin and after his death on a cross he descended to hell.

John the Baptist, according to scripture, preceded Jesus. His ministry was one of baptism by water and that he was heralding the coming of the long awaited messiah. In fact, John's crying out to the Jews from the wilderness is compared to the Prophet Elijah. John's ministry then fulfills one prophecy regarding Jesus and that is that his coming will be announced by an Elijah like herald.

Reduced to its simplest form, here is what we know from biblical writers and from other

sources about the man called Jesus. A male child was born approximately 4-1BC in Bethlehem to a woman named Mary. His lineage then fulfills fifteen (15) Biblical prophecies these being: (1) Seed of a woman: (2) The son of Man: (3) A time for his birth in Bethlehem: (4) Instructed by God, Mary and her husband Joseph named this child Jesus: (5-6-7-8-9) The ancestors of Mary and Joseph can be traced back to include Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, Shem David all of whom were of the Hebrew race: (10) Jesus was born at Bethlehem when his parents were there to be counted in a census: (11) After Jesus' birth in Bethlehem, they then returned to their home town of Nazareth where Jesus would spend most of his childhood: (12) Herod hearing about Jesus' birth ordered all male babies two years of age or younger to be killed: (13) An angel appears to Joseph, informs him of this and tells Joseph to take Mary and Jesus and flee to Egypt: (14) After the death of Herod the Holy Family returns to Nazareth: (15) Jesus would be then called out of Egypt and would return to Israel.

When he was about thirty years of age Jesus began a teaching and healing ministry in Galilee. This ministry seems to have fulfilled eleven (11) more prophecies. They are: (1) A Nazarene who would live in Galilee: (2) A healing ministry: (3) He would heal the broken hearted: (4) Teaching by parables: (5) That he was the Redeemer: (6) He is the son of God.: (7) He has the wisdom of God: (8) He is the word of God: (9) He is the God of

Israel: (10) He is the Messiah: and (11) He is the mediator, the intercessor between man and God.

Approximately three years later he had a large group of followers and was very popular. Eventually Jesus and his followers returned to Jerusalem where his entry into the city was made by him riding on the back of a donkey. His entry was met with wide spread jubilation. This did not rest easy with some of the Jewish rulers of the day who plotted to arrest him They paid Judas, one of Jesus' followers, thirty (30) pieces of silver to betray him. By returning to Jerusalem and the ensuing events, Jesus fulfilled seven (7) more prophecies: They are: (1) Entering the city on a donkey: (2) Rejected by the rulers: (3) Betrayed for 30 pieces of silver: (4) Accused by false witness: (5) Silent to the accusations: (6) Hated without reason and (7) Beaten and spit upon.

He was accused of blasphemy, was tried by the Jewish court of the day, the Sanhedrin, found guilty by Caiaphas the chief priest. Under Roman rule the Jewish elders and chief priest were not permitted to condemn a person to death nor could they carry out a sentence of death and for that reason Jesus of Nazareth was taken to Pilate the governor of the day who reluctantly issued the execution order and Jesus was crucified. After being nailed to the cross and placed between two thieves who were also being crucified, the soldiers cast lots for his clothing. The few words Jesus

spoke while being crucified are also recorded in scripture. Eventually, being near death, Jesus accepts a drink of vinegar and gall and shortly thereafter he dies. To inflict greater suffering it was customary for the Roman soldiers to break the legs of a person being crucified. When the soldiers came to Jesus they discovered he was already dead and so instead of breaking his legs to make sure he was dead they pierced his side with a spear. Joseph of Arimathea, a rich man, requests from Pilate and is granted Jesus' body that he buries in his own grave. Jesus' trial, crucifixion, death and entombment fulfill nine (9) more prophecies. They are: (1) soldiers cast lots for his clothing: (2) His dying words: (3) He would die with malefactors: (4) Given vinegar and gall: (5) His death on the cross: (6) His suffering: (7) Side pierced, no bones broken: (8) Buried by a rich man and (9) His entombment.

The biblical account continues that his followers scatter and hide from the authorities and then on the morning of the third day the tomb is found to be empty and angels proclaim that Jesus has been resurrected from the dead and has been taken up into heaven. We do know his followers were immediately scattered, however we cannot prove that Jesus was by the power of God raised from the dead. We do, however have eye witness accounts of him appearing to them after his crucifixion, and have eye witness accounts to his ascension into heaven.

From my above analysis we can conclude 44 of the fifty Biblical prophecies concerning him were indeed fulfilled by him. The other six, as alluded to earlier, are not verifiable.

Here, is an amazing, surprising and astonishing, almost unbelievable thing. Old Testament Scriptures, some of which were written thousands of years before His birth plainly foretell Jesus' complete life story, to the minutest detail. Is this not overwhelming evidence of the existence of God, One who transcends mortal human thoughts and physical capabilities? Or can we still conclude that Jesus is a mythical person?

Earlier in chapter four I quoted what some notables said about Jesus and God. The fact that Josephus a Hebrew who became a Roman and is a noted historian writes about Jesus strongly suggest his existence. I would again like to quote Haim Cohn Justice, Supreme Court of Israel. In his book *The Trial and Death of Jesus* on page 330 he writes: "The trial of Jesus is part and parcel of Jewish legal history. Not only was Jesus a Jew who lived and taught and fought and died among his people in Jerusalem, but the Sanhedrin, the Great Council of the Jews and their Highest court, is said to have taken a part in the events which led to his trial and crucifixion". Here Justice Haim Cohn a Jew tells us a man named Jesus Christ Jesus walked upon the face of the earth.

Sulamith Ish-Kishor: a Jewish Author and Historian in her book *History of Israel, From the Second Temple to the Present Time* not only acknowledges Jesus she also acknowledges John the Baptist another Biblical character. On page 53 she writes: “Two more parties formed out of the Pharisees. One was Messianic who found a leader in a man named Johanan (John) who declared that the Messiah was coming; he led the people to bathe in the waters of the Jordan to purify themselves in preparation for him. John was captured and put to death by Herod’s son Antipas, who ruled over Galilee. But you know you can never kill an idea by killing the men who believe in it. This death only excited the people, and prepared the way for the coming of Jeshua, (Jesus), son of a Galilean carpenter. The Christian era dates from his birth”. On page 54 we read “People began to believe that the young Jeshua, who was baptized by John, was actually the Messiah. The gentle ways, the noble thoughts of Jeshua seemed beautiful, after the cruel ideas of the Romans and the Herods. Although Jeshua never declared himself openly as the Messiah, and although he believed in conquering hate by love, the Romans began to be suspicious of his growing influence. The Sanhedrin strongly disliked the idea of a man declaring himself of the same nature as God. The procurator Pontius Pilate, regarding him as a rebel against Rome ordered the usual punishment in such cases, -Crucifixion”.

Sulamith's story parallels the Biblical account of John the Baptist and Jesus.

I will now examine in more detail the life of Jesus, his teaching ministry, his healing ministry, his claim to be the son of God and his betrayal and death.

Chapter Six: The Biblical account of Jesus' Ministry and Death.

The Bible's Book of MARK:

Although the author does not identify himself, theologians are unanimous that this gospel was written by John Mark. We can conclude from Mark who was described by Papias an early Christian writer (ca. 135AD) as Peter's interpreter and having been a close associate of Peter he accurately preserved, arranged and shaped the preaching of Peter. Mark a cousin of Barnabas, is also known to have travelled with Barnabas and Paul on their missionary journeys (**Acts 12:25, Acts 13:3, and Acts 15:36-39**). This Gospel may have been composed as early as 50 or 60 AD and most certainly was composed before the destruction of the Temple in Jerusalem in 70AD. In chapter **11:15-19** Mark gives us the account of Jesus clearing the temple of the money changers. This strongly suggests the temple had not yet been destroyed; additionally the book ends with the account of Jesus' ascension into heaven. Composition most likely took place in Italy or more specifically in Rome. Mark's audience would have been Gentile (Roman) unfamiliar with Jewish customs. We can draw this conclusion from the fact that Mark explains Jewish customs in chapter **7:2-4** and also in **15:42**. He also translates Aramaic words in **3:17, 5:41, 7:11, 7:34 and 15:22**. Mark begins his book with the baptism of Jesus and concludes it with Jesus, ascension into heaven. Mark's

Gospel is simple giving a vivid account of Jesus' ministry. He places more emphasizes on Jesus, miracles then what Jesus preached.

You will recall at the beginning of Chapter Four a number of early writers were quoted as having mentioned Jesus. To my knowledge they did not quote from the Gospels, the first four books of The New Testament. As mentioned above and indicated in the direct quotation below, Papias may have been the first to reference the Gospels.

“The only reference to Christian gospel before 150AD is in Papias who about 135 AD reports an unidentified John the Elder as saying that Mark had composed his gospel from memories conveyed to him by Peter. Papias adds Matthew transcribes in Hebrew the Logia- apparently an early Aramaic collection of the sayings of Christ. We can conclude, with the brilliant but judicious Schweitzer, that the Gospel of Mark is essential genuine history” (Durant: “Caesar and Christ” pages 555 and 556).

Theologians and historical writers generally agree that the gospel of Mark dates between 50-70AD and that Mark was a disciple of Jesus. **If Mark is genuine history, is it not then true that Jesus walked the face of this earth?**

The Bible's Book of Matthew:

Matthew's name means "gift of the Lord". **In chapter 9 verses 9 through 13** we read that he was a tax collector who left his work to follow Jesus. It was not uncommon for Jewish people of that time to have more than one name. In **Mark chapter 2 verses 13 through 15** and **Luke chapter 5 verses 27 through 29** he also was known by his other name Levi. Theologians unanimous agree that the New Testament book of Matthew was written by one of Jesus disciples, the apostle Matthew. Matthew seems to be addressing his subject matter to the Jews (Hebrew), from this we can conclude the book was probably written in Palestine. Another clue that Matthew is Jewish is the fact that in the first 16 verses of chapter 1 he traces Jesus' genealogy only back to Abraham the father of the Hebrew (Jewish) race. Some theologians and historians date the book to around 50AD. Others date it to a much later period between 65 and 70AD. I personally favour the earlier date. I make this statement based on the fact that Matthew when called by Jesus to be a disciple was working as a tax collector. According to Jewish custom of the day, a person became self sufficient at age 30. If so a date of 65 or 70AD would then place Matthew's age at 95 or 100 years of age when he composed this book. Matthew's main purpose of the book is to prove to the Jewish people that Jesus is the Messiah.

The Bible's Book of Luke:

It is generally agreed by most theologians that this book was written by Luke who is also credited with writing Acts. Both books Acts and Luke are addressed to the same individual Theophilus (**see chapter 1 verse 3**) Luke probably was a Gentile by birth, being a doctor (**see Colossians 4:14**) he was well educated and was also very familiar with Greek culture. Luke was a companion of Paul at various times from his second missionary journey to Paul's 2nd imprisonment at Rome by Emperor Nero in 66-67 AD. He was a loyal friend who remained with Paul after others had deserted him (**see 2nd Timothy chapter 1: 9-11**). This book was probably written at Rome and may have been written as early as 67-68AD. The writer Luke attempts to write down in orderly sequence eyewitness and other historical events that had taken place and for this reason he draws heavily on what had been written in Matthew and Mark.

The Bible's Book of John:

Theologians and historians agree that this book was written by the apostle John, "the disciple whom Jesus loved". We can conclude from his writing that he knew Jewish life well, Jewish customs, the geography of Palestine and the hostility between Jews and Samaritans. Many verses throughout the book are obvious recollections to an eye witness account. One such reference is his description in **chapter 12 verse 3** of the fragrance of a jar

of broken perfume. He also suggests to us that he was at the cross when Jesus died. We can draw this conclusion from his account of Jesus asking from the cross **chapter 19 verses 26 and 27** immediately before his death, for John to take care of Jesus' mother. John begins his book by stating that "The Word" (Jesus) was with God before the creation of the heavens and the earth. He immediately moves to John the Baptist and then the baptism of Jesus Christ. John gives us a vivid picture of the life and times of Jesus and then closes the book with Jesus reinstating Peter as the head of the church. There are a group of theologians and historians who date this book to 85AD or later. Another group suggest a much earlier date of perhaps 50-70AD. They base their conclusions on a number of developed theories, one being in **chapter 5 verse 2** John states "there is in Jerusalem, near the Sheep Gate a pool" suggesting that Jerusalem was not yet destroyed. Jerusalem was destroyed including burning of the Temple in 70AD.

Having a basic knowledge of the above books referred to by Christians as Gospel books, from what they present we are now prepared to examine the life of Jesus.

The Birth of Jesus:

To my knowledge the only written record of the birth of Jesus is from the Bible's gospels. Matthew and Luke assign Jesus' birth to the days when Herod was king of

Judea. This then places his birth before 4 BC as Herod died in 4 BC. Luke however goes on to say that Jesus at about 30 years of age was baptized by John in the fifteenth year of Tiberius' reign that would be in 28 or 29AD. If so, this places Jesus' birth in 2-1 BC. Luke also mentions a census decreed by Caesar Augustus and for this reason Joseph took Mary to Bethlehem to be counted in his town, the birth place of his ancestors. There is no known record of any census been taken between 4 and 1 BC, so the exact date and year that Jesus was born remains a mystery. Will Durant in his book "Caesar and Christ" tells us on page 558 that his parents gave him the common name Yeshu'a (our Joshua), meaning the help of Yahweh. The Greeks made this into Lesous and the Romans into Lesus. He offers no further explanation and of course this is in conflict with the scriptures that clearly state that God instructed them to name him Jesus. (Please see Matthew chapter 1 verses 23-25).

What was Jesus Like?

Joseph was a carpenter and for this reason Jesus most likely was his understudy and would not have attended school. However, according to scripture he at age 12 was teaching in the temple at Jerusalem (see Luke chapter 2 beginning at verse 41) and later in life he is portrayed as being able to read. While at Nazareth he rose in synagogue on the Sabbath and read from Isaiah (please see Luke chapter 4 beginning at verse 16).

We have no portrait or photograph of Jesus nor do we have one artifact that can be attributed to him, unless “The Shroud of Turin” is his burial cloth. In Chapter Seven, I examine the controversy surrounding “The Shroud”. We can gather from the gospels that he wore sandals on his feet, like other men of the age, would have worn a tunic under a cloak and probably a cloth headdress falling over his shoulders to shield him from the sun. He could answer any question with the skill one would expect of a lawyer. His powers of mind were such that no one could confuse him. At times he exhibited sorrow and anger but for the most part he was compassionate and a great teacher who usually taught by speaking in parables.

Parables taught by Jesus:

In the Old Testament Books of Isaiah and The Psalms it was prophesied that Jesus’ ministry would also be a ministry where by he would teach by parables. The Gospels of Matthew and Mark record twenty five (25) parables. Luke records an additional fifteen (15) parables that Jesus used in his ministry. These parables can be scrutinized by reading the above mentioned New Testament Books. I have chosen not to list them but ask the question. How could Isaiah and the Psalmist have known that hundreds of years later Jesus would teach by parables? Isaiah and the Psalmists tell us that their God told them.

Miracles performed by Jesus:

According to the Bible Jesus' ministry was among other things a ministry of performing miracles. Both the Old and New Testaments of the Bible record miracles being performed by persons enriched by the power of their God. The first two such recorded miracles are recorded in Exodus when Aaron's staff becomes a snake chapter 7 verse 10 and when Moses and Aaron change the water of Nile into blood by waving Aaron's staff over it chapter 7 verse 17-21. There are many, many more examples of miracles in the Old Testament and New Testaments performed by righteous persons; however I should like to turn my attention to the miracles performed by Jesus that were recorded by Matthew, Mark and John, three members of his inner circle who most likely witnessed the miracles first hand.

	Matthew	Mark
Jesus raising persons from the dead:		
Jarius daughter	9:18-19, 23-25	5:22-24,
and from John Chapter 38-42		
Lazarus from John chapter 11:1-14		
Note: Luke in chapter 7 verse 11-15 writes the account of Jesus raising the widow's son from the dead at Nain.		
Healing Miracles Performed by Jesus:		
Man with leprosy	8:2-4	1:40-42
Roman centurion's servant	8:5-13	
Peter's mother in-law	8:14-15	1:30-31
Two men from Gadara	8:28-34	5:1-15
Paralyzed man	9:2-7	2:3-12
Woman with bleeding	9:20-22	5:25-29
Two blind men	9:27-31	
Mute demon possessed man	9:32-33	
Man with shriveled hand	12:10-13	3:1-5
Blind, mute, demon possessed man	12:22	
Canaanite woman's daughter	15:21-28	7:24-30
Boy with a demon	17:14-18	9:17-29
Two blind men	20:29-34	10:46-52

Deaf mutes		7:31-37
Possessed man in synagogue		1:23-26
Blind man at Bethsaida		8:22-26
Official's son at Capernaum: from John Chapter 4:46-54		
Sick man at pool at Bethesda; from John Chapter 5:1-9		
Man born blind: from John Chapter 9:1-7		
Jesus' power over nature:		
Calming the stormy sea	8:23-27	4:37-41
Walking on water	14:25	6:48-51
Feeding 5000 persons	14:51-21	6:35-44
Feeding 4000 persons	15:32-38	6:1-9
Coin in fish	17:24-27	
Withered fig tree	21:18-32	11:12-14,
and from John Chapter 20-25		
Water turned to wine: from John chapter 2:1-11.		
A large catch of fish : from John Chapter 21:1-11.		

Jesus' Trial, Crucifixion, Death and Burial:

The Biblical account of the trial, death by crucifixion, burial and resurrection of Jesus can be found in Matthew chapters 26 through and including chapter 28; Mark chapter 14 through 16; Luke chapters 22 through and including chapter 24 and John chapter 18 through and including chapter 21. The details within each put forth the same theme. Jesus' ministry, the company he kept and the miracles he performed especially those on the Sabbath did not rest well with the Jewish rulers of the day. They plotted to have him arrested and then paid Judas, one of his disciples, 30 pieces of silver to have him delivered to them so he could be arrested. He appeared before the Sanhedrin, the Jewish high court of the day, and was accused of blasphemy, a crime punishable by death. In those days, under Roman rule, the Jewish leaders were not permitted to execute a prisoner and for this reason Jesus was taken

before Herod and Pilate. Pilate could find no fault with Jesus and was reluctant to punish him. However, he eventually issued the execution order. Jesus was mocked, beaten and then crucified. It is worth while to read the full account of the events surrounding Jesus' arrest and crucifixion in the above mentioned biblical books.

The Empty Tomb and Jesus' Many Appearances:

The story of Jesus' tomb being found empty on the morning of the third day can be found in the 28th chapter of Matthew, the 16th chapter of Mark and the 28th chapter of John. That morning Jesus appeared to Mary Magdalene; Mark 16:9-11 and John 20:11-18. At first Mary did not recognize Jesus. She at first thought him to be the gardener. Matthew in chapter 28:9-10 gives us the account of Mary Magdalene and the other Mary who went to Jesus' tomb to find it empty. They were given instructions by an angel to go and tell the disciples that Jesus was resurrected. The two women ran to tell the disciples, however before reaching them Jesus appeared before them. His instructions to them were to tell the disciples to go to Galilee and wait there for Jesus. Mark chapter 16 verses 13 records that next Jesus appeared to two of the disciples on the road to Emmaus and then to a gathering of 11 of the disciples. In the Bible there are other recorded incidences of Jesus' appearance however, they are reported by persons who were not witnesses to the event

and for that reason I have chosen not to comment on them.

The Christian faith is based upon the empty tomb and the resurrected Jesus. If Jesus did not rise from the dead then Christianity has no basis and believers hope in vain. But, what if, Jesus by the power of God was raised from the dead? We cannot of course prove historically that this happened. Today we only have the accounts of eye witnesses, the New Testament writers who were of Jesus' inner circle and it could be argued that their stories have been fabricated to coincide with the Old Testament prophecies. Having said that, either Emperor Tiberitus (14-37AD) or Claudius (41-54AD) issued an edict against grave robbing, it read an offender is to be sentenced to death. Prior to the edict being issued, if one were caught grave robbing the punishment was mild. Leland M Haines suggests that this edict was issued very soon after Jesus body disappeared from his tomb and was due to the Jewish believer's reaction caused by Jesus' resurrection. Refusing to worship Roman Gods and/or the Roman Emperor many Jews, Greeks, Romans and others believed Jesus rose from the dead and converted to Christianity.

Matthew, one of Jesus' followers and perhaps an eye witness to his death, wrote in chapter 27 beginning at verse 45 in the book that bears his name this account of Jesus' death. **“From noon onward, darkness came over the whole land until three in the**

afternoon” (TNAB) and goes on to describe in detail the last moments of Jesus’ life before succumbing to death on the cross. The Old Testament prophet Amos wrote in the book that bears his name as follows; **“On that day, says the Lord God , I will make the sun set at midday and cover the earth with darkness in broad daylight”** (TNAB chapter 8 verse 9). Was this a reference to what was to happen at the time of Jesus’ death?

Why would Matthew record that the darkness came over the land? Why would he be so specific to give the exact duration of the darkness? Why would he not record what caused the darkness? The answer to these questions could be that Matthew was an eye witness to the event and simply recorded what he saw and experienced and was not necessarily referring to Amos’ prophecy. Matthew, being a Jew would certainly have read the book of Amos. The question is would he have understood that perhaps God speaking through his prophet Amos was referring to the time of Jesus’ crucifixions and death?

The Ascension of Jesus into Heaven:

Mark in chapter 16 verses 19-20 gives us the account of Jesus being taken up into heaven. Here we read that Jesus gave his disciples the commission to preach the gospel to all nations and then while they stood and watched he was taken up into Heaven. Tradition has it that the place of ascension

was on the Mount of Olives. The spot was marked by Christian followers who chiseled two foot prints in a stone on the Mount of Olives and then built a small tower over it. The Muslims after conquering Israel domed this structure and removed one of the chiseled foot prints claiming them to be that of Muhammad and placed it in the dome of the rock.

I will now examine the mysteries of The Shroud of Turin a rather large cloth that may or may not have been Jesus' burial cloth.

The Shroud of Turin:

The origin of the shroud and its images is probably one of the most studied artifacts in human history, and also one of the most controversial. The shroud that is obviously a burial cloth of a crucified man is housed in the Cathedral of Saint John the Baptist in Turin Italy. The image and how it was fixed on the cloth remains a deeply puzzling mystery. The history of the cloth can be divided into two time periods; pre-1204 and from 1204 until the present. Robert of Clari, a French knight mentioned seeing the shroud in Constantinople in 1204. In 1354 it was reported to be in a church in Liney in central France. We know that in 1453 it became the property of the Savoy family of France when Margaret de Charney deeded the Shroud to the House of Savoy. It was then moved to Chambery where it was damaged by a fire in 1532. Fourteen large triangular and eight

smaller patches were sewn onto the cloth by Poor Clare Nuns in an attempt to repair it. In 1578 the Shroud was transferred to Turin and placed in the Savoy private chapel in that city's cathedral. Attempts to improve the repairs made by the Poor Clare nuns were made to the shroud in 1594 by Sebastian Valfire. Further repairs were also made by Clotilde of Savoy in 1868. The last king of Italy Umberto II a member of the house of Savoy bequeathed the shroud to the Vatican. In 2002 it was restored by the Vatican. The cloth backing and thirty patches were removed. These had hidden the reverse side of the cloth from view. Once removed a ghostly image of a crucified body was found on the cloth.

In 1898 an amateur photographer, Secondo Pia photographed The Shroud while it was being displayed in Turin. Amazing his black and white negative image shows a much more detailed image than the one in its natural sepia. In 1978 a group of American scientists (STURP) found no evidence of forgery; however they could not explain how the image was transferred to the cloth. Scientists from the laboratories of the University of Oxford, the University of Arizona and from the Swiss Federal Institute of Technology concurred that carbon dating of small samples of the cloth date it to between 1260 and 1390. Peer-reviewed articles since then have suggested that the samples tested may not have represented the whole shroud suggesting the test samples may have been taken from

the cloth used in repairing rather than from the original shroud material.

The distinctive images on the cloth are of a naked man with his hands folded across his groin area. His body wounds are that of crucifixion and match the Biblical description of the death of Jesus as recorded by Matthew and Mark. They also recorded that his dead body was wrapped in a cloth prior to it being placed in his tomb. The markings (images) on the cloth include: the right wrist bears a large round wound, the left wrist is covered by the right hand and for that reason if wounded the wound cannot be seen; a large wound penetrates the thoracic cavity; there are small punctures around the forehead and scalp; the torso and legs have scores of wounds on them; the face of the victim is severely swollen; there are streams of blood down both arms; there is no evidence of either leg being broken and there are large puncture wounds in both feet.

The tortures of Roman crucifixion normally included breaking the legs of the victim to inflict further pain and suffering. It did not usually include a puncture wound to the chest or in the case of this person small puncture wounds around the forehead and scalp. Could these small scalp wounds have been made by a crown of thrones? We do not honestly know as there is no scientific evidence to support this. This victim also received a chest wound. As previously stated there is no evidence of his legs being broken.

The images of the wounds of the crucified person on this cloth appear to perfectly match the Biblical description given to us by Matthew and Mark of Jesus' crucifixion wounds. Could it be that this is the cloth used to wrap Jesus' dead body in? Could it be that the images on the cloth are those of Jesus' body? We do not know. Perhaps this will remain forever a mystery.

Chapter Seven: Jesus' Prophecies from the New Testament.

Dating the Biblical Books:

As with most books of the Bible it is sometimes difficult to determine exactly when the book may have been written. Matthew is no exception. Some place its composition as early as 50AD while others place it's composition between 65 and 70 AD. Still others argue that it was written after 100 and perhaps as late as 120AD. If you are interested in examining the arguments as to when Matthew might have been composed many can be found by reading various Bible commentaries. Additionally, there are many others that can be examined by Gogglng Matthew/New Testament. What most Theologians agree on is that Levi or Matthew as he was known was a Jew who was acting as a Roman tax collector. In this position he would most certainly be despised by most Jews and would most certainly have been a mature adult at that time. Two thousand years ago a Jewish man was not considered mature until thirty (30) years of age and it was not uncommon to be known by two or more names. According to Mark in chapter 2 verses 14 to 16 Jesus called Levi to become a disciple of his inner circle. Levi/Matthew would have had to be at least 30 years of age when called by Jesus that would put his age at about 83 years old in 50AD. For this reason I personally favor that the book was probably written post 50AD. I am now going to

examine some of the Bible's New Testament's prophecies, those recorded as having been made by Jesus. Again my intent is to try and determine if the prophecy actually happened.

The Destruction of the Temple in Jerusalem Prophesied by Jesus:

In Matthew chapter 24 verse 2 (NIV) we read that Jesus prophesied saying; **“Do you see all these things”? “I tell you the truth, not one stone here will be Left one on another, every one will be thrown down”.**

According to Matthew, Jesus was standing near the temple in Jerusalem and said to his followers that eventually, the temple and the city would be destroyed.

The Judean patriots hated the Romans and for this reason they conducted guerrilla warfare almost continuously until starting in 67 AD Rome decided enough was enough and set upon a course to squash all resistance. Jotapata, Galilee and Joppa all fell by August and Tarichea fell in September. Perera fell in sixty eight (68). Sixty nine (69) might have been a year of relative calm as there does not appear to be any recorded conflicts or victories. A few days before the Jewish Passover holiday in 70 AD the Roman army led by Titus laid siege to Jerusalem. It was five full months before the city fell. The Roman soldiers furiously, ruthlessly,

murderously butchered women, children, old men, young men, priests and laymen and then set fire to the city including the temple, which, after being originally destroyed by the Babylonians in 586 BC had been rebuilt at Jerusalem by Darius between 521 and 485 BC and then expanded under the reign of Herod starting in 20 BC. Historically we know that the Romans, after razing Jerusalem and the temple, tore down all the buildings and walls of the city. To show how mighty the Roman army was, they left a small section of the western wall standing. This today is known as the Wailing Wall.

The heat generated by the burning fire melted the gold contained within the temple's interior walls and ceiling, the now liquid gold ran between the stones used in the temple's construction. After the temple flames died down and the stones cooled, the Roman soldiers took it apart stone by stone recovering the gold wafers. **Does this full fill Jesus' prophecy that he made some 30-40 years before concerning the destruction of the temple?** It would seem so.

The Roman conquest of Judah continued and three more formidable Jewish fortresses Herodium, Masada and Machaerus all fell. Many of the Judean survivors were again sold into slavery. At Masada, rather than surrender, a voluntary mass murder and suicide took place. According to Josephus a Jewish historian, of the nine hundred and seventy two inhabitants there, only two

women and five children survived. It is worthy to note here that some historians, some theologians and this writer believe that Josephus was the only survivor at Masada. This is based upon the detail he wrote about the events that took place at Masada. (Please reference Josephus' comments regarding Jesus in the chapter five "What some notables had to say about Jesus').

Jesus prophesied there would be Famine and Earthquakes:

Again quoting from Matthew chapter 24 verse 7: (NIV) we read that Jesus prophesied as follows: **"there will be famines and earthquake in various places"**. Famine always follows a major earthquake. The earthquake destroys infrastructure such as roads, buildings, electrical, natural gas lines, water lines and sewer disposal systems. This almost always leads to shortage of food, water and shelter that sometimes leads to further suffering, disease and death. The World Almanac lists recorded major earthquakes from 1000AD to 1991 as follows: between 1000 and 1800 there were 21, between 1800 and 1900 there were 18 recorded, between 1900 and 1950 33 were recorded and then between 1950 and 1991 there were 93. One has to immediately question how accurate the recording of earthquakes between 1000 and 1800 would have been. Recorded earthquakes 1000 to and including 1991 totalled 165. The number of recorded earthquakes with a magnitude of 7.0 or more excluding after

shocks from 1991 to 2010 totals 316 (Source USGS). This would seem to indicate that the frequency of earthquake occurrences is increasing dramatically. Additionally from the data outlined below it would also appear that the magnitude of earthquakes is increasing.

The U.S. Geological Survey@ 2011MCT listing the world's 19 most devastating earthquakes indicates all have occurred within the last 105 years. They are as follows:

Year:	Location:	Magnitude/Richter Scale:
1906	Off the coast of Ecuador	8.8
1922	Chile/Argentina border	8.5
1923	Kamchatka Russia	8.5
1938	Banda Sea Indonesia	8.5
1950	Assam Tibet	8.6
1952	Kamchatka Russia	9.0
1957	Andreanof Islands Alaska	8.6
1960	Chile	9.5
1963	Kuril Islands	8.5
1964	Prince William Sound Alaska	9.2
1965	Rat Island Alaska	8.7
2004	Off the coast of Northern Sumatra	9.1
2005	Northern Sumatra	8.6
2007	Southern Sumatra	8.5
2007	Solomon Islands	8.0
2009	Samoa	8.0
2010	Chile	8.8
2010	Haiti	7.1
2011	Northern Coast of Japan	8.9

Does the above earthquake statistics fulfill the prophecy made by Jesus in Matthew chapter 24 of an increase in earth quake occurrences??

Jesus prophesied there would be False Prophets/Persons claiming to be Him:

In chapter 24 verse 5 and verse 11 of the Bible's New Testament Book of Matthew (NIV) we read that when Jesus was questioned, he tells his disciples **"For many will come in my name saying I am the Messiah and they will deceive many"** and also **"Many false prophets will arise and deceive many"**. Eluded earlier was that the Bible's book of Matthew was most likely composed by him prior to 50AD? You will also remember that the Vulgate St. Jerome's translation from the original Greek and Hebrew into Latin was completed before 400AD. The King James Version of the Bible; an early English version, was translated from the original Greek between 1604 and 1611AD. All of these translations occurred centuries before many of the persons listed below were born.

Scrutiny of various publications I have read, and internet searches under Prophets, Prophets/False Prophets I find that, there are hundreds of persons who have claimed to be prophets. **The following persons have professed to be or others advocated that they were/are prophets** some of whom claim to have performed miracles such as healing the sick and/or accurately predicted futuristic historical events. A partial listing of persons past and present, claiming to be prophets would be as follows: Abraham Adulafi , Shabbathi Zebi, Cardoso, Sabbatai Zevi,

Jacob Frank, Mohammed, Jose Luis De Jesus Miranda, Kwane Nkrumah, Wayne Bent, Rex Farrye, Garner Ted Armstrong, Herbert W. Armstrong, Arnold Murray, Banjan Ram Bahadur, John C. Barlow, Mike Bickle, Helena P. Blavatsky, Paul Cain, Edgar Cayce, Benjamin Crème, Jeanne Dixon, John Alexander Dowie, Arthur Conan Doyle, Dimitru Duduman, Maria Esperanzo, Charles Finney, Keith Grayton, Jim Jones, Robert Jones, Leroy Sunderland Johnston, T. B. Joshua, Rick Joyner, Carl Jung, Kenneth Hagin, Prophecies Henoah, Marilyn Hickey, Gordon B. Hinckley, John Hinkle, Benny Hinn, David Hogan, Hon-Ming Chen, William Hybels, Alois Irlmaier, John Kilpatrick, Mark King, Sarah King, David Koresh, Dayer Labaron, Joel Labaron, John D. Lee, Dan Lafferty, Ron Lafferty, Maitreya, Billy Meir, Sun Muyung Moon, Crosfield Robert Onias, Pat Roberts, Oral Roberts, Jeffs Rulon, Charles Taze Russell, Joseph F. Rutherford, Gordon Michael Scallion, Gwen Shaw, D. James Shaw, Sitchim Zecharia, Joseph Smith, Mitar Tarabich, John Taylor, Terelya Josyp, Claude Vorilhon, H. G. Wells, Woodruff Wilford, Ellen G. White, John W. Wooley, Lorin C. Wooley, Brigham Young, Menahem Mendel Schursohn and Zoroaster Saoshyant. There are many, many more, however listing them would be mundane and perhaps I have already named too many and by doing so have myself become boring. All of the persons listed above were born within the last 2000 years **with a large percentage of them having lived within the last**

century. It is interesting to note, when one conducts a thorough search of all pertinent available information regarding prophets/false prophets, the total number of person claiming to be prophets within the last 100 years far exceeds those of the prophets named in the 7,000 years of Bible history. There are only 42 prophets named in the Bible.

The first recorded person claiming to be the Messiah may have been Simon Bar Kokhba. He was a Jew who in 132-136AD led the third revolt against the Romans. His Messianic role was considered by many Jews including Akiba Ben Joseph to be the warrior king who they expected to destroy all their enemies and restore the Israeli Kingdom. It is of interest to note that Akiba Ben Joseph was the great Jewish Rabbi who led a group of rabbis who decided which books would make up and comprise the Talmud, part of the Torah the Jewish Holy Book. The Christians of the day never supported Bar Kokhba and this probably helped to differentiate Christianity from Judaism more than any other factor.

Of the cumulated above list it is interesting to note that, Abraham Adufali a 13th century Jew, claimed to be the Messiah. Sabbatai Zevi (1626-1676), a Turkish Jew claimed to be the Messiah and had a huge following. Sabbatai apparently went to Constantinople where the Sultan had him put in prison. So many gifts poured into the prison cell it became like a palace. The

Sultan, having no political will to make a martyr of the imprisoned Sabbatai, allows the gifts to continue and for Sabbatai to receive visitors. Eventually the Sultan finds an effective means of dealing with Zevi by giving him the choice between death and conversion. Zevi chose conversion and became a Muslim. Zevi's followers and the Jewish communities' world wide were dumfounded. However, for years after Zevi's death small groups of Jews continued to believe in Zevi's teachings. One such group was led by Jacob Frank (1726-1791) who appointed himself Zevi's successor and also claimed to be the Messiah. (Samuel's: Pathway through Jewish History page 272). Another 15th century Jew, Shabbathi Zebi, also claimed to be the Messiah and after his death one of his followers a certain Cardoso claimed to be Shabbathi Zebi reincarnated, claiming to be Zebi is the same as claiming to be the Messiah. Jacob Frank, an 18th century Podolian Jew, claimed to be David, Elijah, Jesus, Mohammed and also Shabbathi Zebi. Jose Luis De Jesus Miranda claims to be the Messiah and the last manifestation of God on earth. Wayne Bent founder of: Our Righteous Church claims to be the Messiah, as did Kwane Nkrumah and Rex Farrye. Banjan Ram Bahadur's followers claim that he was Buddha reincarnated, Dowie John Alexander founder of Zion Ill. called himself Elijah the Restorer, Jim Jones of the 1978 Jonestown massacre claimed to be Jesus, Sun Muyung Moon founder of the Unification Church whose followers are Moonies claims to be

God, Hon-Ming Chen claims to be the father of Jesus. A claim to be the father of Jesus is actually another way of expressing that one is God. David Koresh, founder of Branch Davidian, who along with his followers died at Waco Texas, claimed to be Jesus. Dan Lafferty claims to be the Old Testament prophet Elijah while Claude Vorilhon claims to be a half brother of Jesus while Saoshyant Zoroaster claimed to be the “chosen one” “make existence bright” what ever that might be construed to mean. Maitreya, founder of New Age Religion in Share International news release number 69 April 2004 and News release No 73 January 2005 claims to be the image on the shroud of Turin and is also awaiting the right moment to emerge to judge the world presumably a reference to being Jesus. Menahem Mendel Schnursohm who died in Brooklyn in 1994 claimed he was the Messiah. Mark and Sarah King founders of Heavens Gate successfully convinced 39 persons to transfer all their personal worldly belongings to them and then convinced all 39 persons to commit suicide with the expectation of their souls catching a heaven bound space ship that was following along in the tail of the Hale Bopp comet.

When one considers the above claims one can only conclude that Jesus knew, understood and correctly prophesied there would be false prophets and others claiming to be the Messiah.

Jesus prophesied of The Unknown Day and Hour:

In the 24th chapter of Matthew Jesus tells his disciples that no one knows when his second advent (his return to earth) will occur. This event is commonly referred to as the end of the world and Christ's second coming. The quote from the NIV verse 36 is as follows: **"No one knows about that day, not even the angels in heaven, not the Son, but only the father"**. In North America at least since March 21 in the year 1844 men have been predicting the end of the world. At that time William Miller, a Baptist minister, predicted the world would end on or before March 21, 1844. **He was stood up**. Spin offs from Miller still exist today they are; Adventism, Jehovah Witnesses, Seven Day Adventives and Advent Christians. There have been many since Miller who also predicted the end of the world. I remember as a child in the 1940's someone made the prediction and many folks in our community took them seriously and stored up great quantities of food and water. I also remember how frightened I was. I do not now recall which group were making that prediction however **I know they were stood up**. Most recently Harold Camping a Christian fundamentalist, a radio host and co-founder of the Family Radio Network predicted the world would end in 1994. **Clearly he was also stood up**. According to the Calgary Herald Sunday May 8th edition Camping is at it again. He claimed the world would end on May 21, 2011. Camping

received extensive media coverage between May 8th and May 21st 2011 and the amount of money spent on billboards, placards and television coverage was staggering. **Seems he was again stood up.** May 21st passed and Camping immediately claimed he miscalculated and that the end of the world will happen October 21st 2011 **obviously he was again stood up.** Perhaps Jesus knew what he was talking about when he was quoted by Matthew in chapter 24, verse 36.

Jesus prophesied Christians would be persecuted:

John the Baptist according to all four Gospels; Matthew, Mark, Luke and John was a forerunner to Jesus. He was the son of Zacharias and Elizabeth, both of priestly descent and lived as a Nazirite. He is known for having a ministry of baptism by water and for having baptized Jesus in the Jordan River. He was arrested and beheaded by orders given by Herod Antipas. The account of his arrest and execution can be found in Matthew chapter 14 verse 1-12 and Mark chapter 6 verses 14-28. It is well worth the read. John the Baptist's death then makes him the first recorded associate of Jesus to be martyred.

According to the Bible Jesus also prophesied that his disciples would suffer the same fate as he would, that they would be martyred. In John chapter 15 verses 18, 19, 20 and 21 we read that Jesus speaking to his inner circle tells them **“If the world hates**

**you keep in mind that they hated me first”
“I have chosen you out of the world. That
is why the world hates you” “If they
persecute me, they will also persecute you”
“They will treat you this way because of
my name”**. The Bible only mentions the
death of two of Jesus’ disciples. James the
Son of Zebedee: according to Acts chapter 12
verses 1 and 2 was put to death by the sword
during the reign of Herod Agrippa 1. We are
also told here in chapter 12 that Herod had
Peter arrested and thrown into prison
however, angels appear and rescue him. Peter
who died in 67AD was the first Pope of the
Catholic Church. The other disciple’s death
recorded in the Bible is Judas Iscariot: who
according to Matthew chapter 27 verse 5
hanged himself.

We have to rely on the writings of early
Christian historians for the fate of the other
disciples. The two most recognized are
Hippolytus of Rome and Eusebius.
Hippolytus whose birth date is unknown died
in 236AD. Eusebius was bishop of Caesarea
in Palestine between 260-341AD.
Extrapolated from their writing is the fate of
the other disciples: **Andrew:** was crucified on
an olive tree, at Patrae a town of Achaia
(Greece) and was buried there.
Bartholomew: was crucified up side down
and was buried in Allatum a town of
Armenia. Armenia was located in what is now
modern day Georgia in Russia. **James Son of
Alpheus:** was stoned to death in Jerusalem
and was buried there. Josephus also wrote

about James as follows: “*Ananus assembled the Sanhedrin of the judges, and brought before them the brother of Jesus, the so called Christ, whose name was James, and some others, and when he had formed an accusation against them as breakers of the law, he delivered them to be stoned.*”

Antiquities XX 9:1” **Matthew also known as**

Levi: died at Hieres, a town of Parthia near modern Tehran. **Simon Peter:** Nero had Simon Peter crucified upside down in Rome.

Philip: was crucified upside down in Hierapolis in the time of Domitian and was buried there. **Simon the Zealot:** became the second Bishop of Jerusalem died at age 120 years and was buried in Jerusalem.

Thaddeus/Judas Son of James: died at Berytus and was buried there. **Thomas:** was thrust through in the four members of his body with a pine spear at Calamene in India and was buried there. **John, Brother of James and Son of Zebedee:** the author of the Book of Revelations was banished by Domitian to the Isle of Patmos and later died in Ephesus.

This is amazing. The followers of Jesus, his inner circle, his disciples would choose persecution, imprisonment and death rather than denounce that Jesus was the Messiah. They might well have saved their own lives simply by stating that Jesus did not rise from the dead. Why would twelve men, nine of who actually were executed because of their belief not choose life rather than death? The answer it seems is because of Jesus’ teaching

while he was with them and the events after his death, they were totally committed He was the son of God. According to biblical scriptures the resurrected Jesus appeared to them and to many others on a number of occasions. To prove that he was not a ghost to some he showed his crucifixion wounds, while with others he ate fish and breads and also drank wine. (Please reference Matthew chapter 28, Mark chapter 16, Luke chapter 24 and John chapter 20 and 21).

Two other early Christians named in the Bible who were martyred are Stephen and Saul (who later became known as Paul). In Acts chapter six we are told that Stephen, a man full of faith and the Holy Spirit, was one of seven persons chosen to distribute food to the widows. Stephen became the first Christian martyr. Apparently being full of God's grace and power Stephen did great wonders and miraculous signs. Opposition arose from members of the Synagogue and Stephen was arrested and put on trial. Chapter 7 presents us with Stephen's defence at his trial. However, when he suggested to his accusers that they had murdered the Messiah they were furious and condemned him to death. **Stephen:** was stoned to death Acts Chapter 7 beginning at verse 54. The witnesses against Stephen laid their clothes at the feet of a young man named Saul who was there giving approval to Stephen's death. At the beginning of Acts chapter 8 we are told: **“On that day a great persecution broke out against the church at Jerusalem, and all**

except the apostles were scattered throughout Judea and Samaria. Godly men buried Stephen and mourned deeply for him. But Saul began to destroy the church. Going from house to house, he dragged off men and women and put them in prison” (NIV). Luke the author of Acts continues his account of Saul in chapter nine of the book of Acts.

According to Luke, Saul continued to persecute the Christians and when on his way to Damascus to persecute and arrest Christians living there he had an encounter with the resurrected Jesus. Luke tells us that suddenly a light flashed all around Saul and his companions. Saul was knocked off his mount; fell to the ground, blinded and that a voice spoke to him saying **“Saul, Saul, why do you persecute me?”**(NIV) When Saul questions who is speaking to him the voice responds telling him **“I am Jesus, whom you are persecuting, now get up and go into the city, and you will be told what you must do”**. The narration continues that in Damascus there was a man named Ananias who Jesus tells to go to Saul and restore his sight. Ananias visits Saul, lays hand on him and prays over him, immediately Saul’s sight is restored, Saul gets up, is baptised and almost immediately begins preaching the word of God. Saul’s words and actions prompted the Jews living in Damascus to try and kill him. Saul, helped by friends escapes and travels to Jerusalem where Barnabas befriends him and they begin travelling

together. In chapter 13 verse 9 (NIV) we are told that Saul begins using his other name: **“Then Saul who was also called Paul was filled with the Holy Spirit”**. Paul continues his preaching and makes a number of missionary journeys. Paul’s life story and his missionary journeys are well documented in Acts and other Biblical books. Authorship of Romans, 1st and 2nd Corinthians, Galatians, Ephesians, Philippians, Colossians, 1st and 2nd Thessalonians 1st and 2nd Timothy, Titus and Philemon is attributed to him. The writings of Paul are different from those of Jesus’ disciples. The disciples were understudies of Jesus during his ministry. **What Paul wrote by his own admission, what he preached was what was revealed to him by his God.** Luke writing in the book of Acts tells us that Paul was stoned, thrown outside the city and left for dead. The preamble to this incident begins at verse 8 chapter 14 of the book of Acts. Then beginning at verse 19 Luke writes as follows: **“However, some Jews from Antioch and Iconium arrived and won over the crowds. They stoned Paul and dragged him out of the city, supposing him to be dead. But when the disciples gathered around him, he got up and entered the city. On the following day he left with Barnabus for Derbe”** (TNAB). Unfortunately Luke does not offer to us any additional information regarding this incident. Years later Paul, while preaching in Rome was arrested and beheaded.

Nero a Roman Emperor who was born around 37AD and ruled 54-68AD is widely written as to having persecuted Christians. The following was extrapolated from Wikipedia “He is also infamously known as the emperor who fiddled while Rome burned and as an early persecutor of Christians”. He was known for having captured Christians and burned them in his garden at night for a source of light. This view is based upon the writings of Tacitus, Suetonius, and Cassius Dio, the main surviving sources for Nero's reign”. Nero was the first of ten evil Roman persecutors. Others such as Domitian, Severus and Valerian followed. Perhaps the most vicious was Diocletian the last of the ten. In addition to inflicting unbelievable pain, suffering and death on anyone suspected of being a Christian he ordered all bibles and churches to be burned. Christians suffered for eight years under Diocletian until his death in 313AD.

There have been other early non Christian writers who have made reference to Jesus and/or Christian persecution; they are Lucian, Pliny the younger, Thallus, Mara Bar Serapion and Shimeon ben Azzai to name a few. If one is interested in what the above mentioned historians may have written about Jesus and the persecution of Christians there is any number of well written articles on the internet, they may be scrutinized by Googling the authors.

Jowett in his book: "The Drama of the Lost Disciples" on pages seventy through and including seventy-two suggests that Christians may have established a church in Britain as early as 36AD and that they had large land holdings. The Romans of course had established themselves in Britain long before and were constantly badgering the Christians who of course resisted Roman rule. Jowett also writes: "*The first armed challenge of a powerful world-conquering nation came when it was officially decreed to destroy Christianity at its core by the extermination of the Island Britain. In the year A.D. 42 Claudius, Emperor of the Romans, issued a fateful decree to destroy Christian Britain, man, woman and child and its great institutions and to burn its libraries. To this purpose Claudius equipped the largest and most efficient army ever sent by Rome to conquer a foe and led by its most able generals.*" The drama of the Lost Disciples page 89

It was punishable by death to accept Christian faith, this ruling also included anyone who was a descendent of David, and in other words it also included those of Jewish faith. Jowett goes on to explain that the slaughter of Christians and Jews by the Romans continued for almost 300 years and did not end until A.D. 320. On page 91 Jowett states: "*In the first 200 hundred years of Christianity over 6 million Christians/Jews were entombed within the catacombs of Rome and then murdered. How many of them were*

buried is difficult to tell as many became food for the lions”.

During the last two thousand years there have been many persecutions of both Christian and non Christians. One of the first was when Islam swept across the Christian world from the mid 7th century until the mid 11th century. Muhammad, the founder of Islam, whose followers are Muslims died in 632AD. Ader Bakr, Muhammad’s successor became known as the holder of the “sword of god” “died in 634AD. Omar 1st succeeded Ader Bakr and assumed the title of the “sword of god” and his first target became Syria.

The people conquered by the advancing Arab armies were given the choice to die or convert to Islam. Records were not kept of how many people chose death to conversion however, one can conclude that they would total into the hundreds of thousands as half the Christian world was conquered by the middle of 11th century. The city of Jerusalem was also taken by the Muslims. The advance of Islam eventually led to the beginning of the crusades.

The Eastern Roman (Byzantine) Emperor Alexis approached Pope Urban the 2nd for help. The Pope called on Europeans to go on a holy war to liberate Jerusalem. This war became known as the Crusades. The crusading armies were made up mainly of uneducated peasants commanded by a few trained career soldiers. The first crusade

began in November of 1095AD: there were 8 more, a total of nine, with the last one ending in 1272AD. The first and second wave of crusaders worked their way up the Rhine and down the Danube rivers, murdering, raping and plundering as they made their way toward Jerusalem. It is estimated that 12,000 Jews were murdered in the Rhine valley alone. It is also estimated that 6,000 Jews were murdered in Jerusalem and up to 30,000 Muslims were slaughtered in a Mosque at Aqsa. The conquering crusaders gave you two choices: embrace the cross or die. Estimates of the total number of lives lost during the crusades range from 200,000 to 5,000,000.

The partition of Poland in the late 1700's brought more than a million Jews under Russian rule. Sporadic persecution by the Russians over the next hundred and eighty years led to a series of slaughters of the Jews. These were known as Pogroms and between 1881 and 1921 occurred at various sites. Many of the Polish Jews, who survived the massacre, immigrated to the United States.

Charney: in his "Genocide: a Critical Bibliographic Review): and Piero Scaruffi in his "1900-2000 A century of Genocide" record that perhaps as many as 160 million persons because of war, religious and ethnic cleansing were killed in the last century. Of these they suggest that under Mao Ze Dong in China and Tibet perhaps as many as 78,000,000 persons lost their lives. In Russia they place their estimate at 27-35 million. In

Soviet Russia under Lenin 7-10,000,000 and under Stalin 20-25,000,000 persons may have been executed. Many of these would have been Christians of the Orthodox faith. (Also see Section Three: Chapter Sixteen: comments on Atheism).

Perhaps the greatest and least known Christian persecution in recorded history occurred during the 2nd Great War from 1939-1945. The Jewish extermination (The Holocaust) by the Nazis under Adolph Hitler has been well documented. What is not so well known is that perhaps as many as 6,000,000 Christians were also exterminated by the Nazis. The reasons why they were exterminated are as follows: they were Christians, because they were black, because they were Polish, because they were invalids, because they were caught trying to help Jewish people escape and because they were not white skinned blue eyed with blonde hair. Adolph Hitler and those in leadership of his Nazi regime were trying to create a Master Race of Aryans that would control Europe. Edward Lucaire in Poland's Holocaust writes that in Poland alone 3 million Jews and 3 million Polish Christians and Catholics were exterminated. Terese Pencak Schwartz also comments that perhaps a total of 6 million Christians were executed in Poland, Hungary, Czechoslovakia, Ukraine, Russia, and Holland, France and even in Germany. Weigel in his book "Witness to Hope" pages 47-73 also states that approximately 6 million people living in Poland lost their lives to the

Nazi/Gestapo. Weigel also comments on the atrocities of life under the rule of the Gestapo. Shortly after the Germans invaded Poland, they systematically set about the eradication of the military leaders, the eradication of religious leaders, and eradication of those in power and all persons of Jewish descent. He describes in some detail the horrors of the occupation.

Christian persecution in those European countries, those directly under the rule of communism in the years following the Second World War have been well documented. Perhaps, no where has persecution been more fully documented and recorded than by Sulamith Ish Kishor in her book *History of Israel from the Second Temple to the Present time*. Here she records persecution and ethnic cleansing beginning with Florus in 64-66AD. Not only does she give us the date and place of each persecution she also gives us the name of the King or ruler who was governing at that time. Excluding the two great wars she has recorded within the pages of her book millions upon millions of persons who lost their lives due to religious, ethnic cleansing or other forms of persecution. An example being on page 239 we read “in the ten years of warfare from 1648-1658 over one hundred thousand Jews lost their lives”. However, one must not overlook the Christian persecution that took place in countries such as Chile under Pinochet, the Philippines under the Marco’s and Argentina during the military rule of Alfonsin. Other nations that have

recently suffered civil war or racial and religious persecution are: Angola, Burundi, Zaire, Nigeria, Gabon, Congo, Togo, Rwanda, Sudan and Somalia. Unconfirmed reports have it that in Somalia some Christians captured by Muslims were crucified.

Why would God allow carnage such as the Holocaust to continue on for such a long period of time? I don't honestly know. It seems to me, to be beyond human comprehension. I do however know, God created man with free will. God did not create evil; God only created the freedom of choice that permits evil to occur. The writers of the "Mysteries of the Bible" comment on page 213 on this subject as follows: "*Why God allows people to suffer is one of the Bible's greatest mysteries. There are no obvious answers. Our suffering, or that of someone we love, is unbearable only in those dark days when – as the Bible puts it – God hides his face. At such times we cry out how much longer. We may even exclaim, Why me? The Bible says that we will overcome suffering if God answers us. It also says that he does hear us and that if we are patient and wait for him, he will reveal to each of us a way to understand and transcend our suffering*".

An early Christian writer Saint Augustine of Hippo, when asked to comment on why God allows evil to exist replied "*We are talking about God. Which wonder do you think you understand? If you understand, it is not God*" Thomas Cahill: *The Gifts of The*

Jews: page 159. Here Augustine is obviously implying man cannot understand God.

The Christian belief is God is the Creator, then everything in the universe including mankind, created with a physical body and a soul that lives forever belongs to God and for that reason I think it matters not to God when our physical body dies.

Today in many countries Christians are still being persecuted. The Calgary Herald on March 22, 2010 reported that perhaps more than 500 Christians mostly women and children were massacred in Nigeria. Then again on April 25, 2011 the Herald reported that perhaps as many as 500 Christians had been arrested and detained in China. Dozens of Christians were arrested on Sunday April 23, 2011 for trying to hold a church service and were blocked by the Chinese authorities from moving into a new meeting hall near Beijing.

The Calgary Herald Sunday Oct 2, 2011 carried an article that in St. Albert, Alberta a father is trying to force the Sturgeon School to remove the Lord's Prayer from the morning ceremonies. The school's student population of 382 students are predominately of the Christian faith; however, one father who claims to be an atheist gets a great deal of attention in the press.

In Egypt rioting during the second weekend of October 2011 resulted in the

death of at least 23 Coptic Christians and untold number of injuries.

During the Christmas Season, there seems to be a flood of articles in the press. Some are pro Christmas (Christianity) however a large percentage of them are not. At this time of year there appears to be an increased activity of attacks against Christians and Christianity. Thursday December 22, 2011 the Calgary Herald on page A13 carried an article entitled "Christians lose nativity plots to atheists" The article relates to 60 year old tradition of the nativity scene in Santa Monica Ca. being replaced by posters from atheists. The contents of the posters are such that they are attacking God and Christianity.

Nigeria, a predominately Muslim country was relatively peaceful, at least until Christmas day 2011. Islamist extremist bombed churches in that country on Christmas Eve and on Christmas Day killing at least 40 people and injuring many more persons. (Calgary Herald Monday December 26, 2011 page A8.) The attacks took place on Christmas Eve outside a church in the north-eastern area of Gadaka, another on Christmas day outside an evangelical church in the central part of Jos and outside a Catholic church in the capital. Apparently gunfire was used to draw the people outside where the bombs were then exploded.

Iran's Ayatollah Ali Khamenei (The Calgary Herald page A20 Saturday February

4, 2012) referred to Israel as cancerous tumour that should be cut out and will be cut out. He also offered that Iran is prepared to offer assistance to any nation confronting Israel and also affirmed Iran's assistance to the Lebanese Hezbollah and the Palestinian Hamas.

Jesus prophesied to his followers that he would be persecuted and because of them believing in him, they would also suffer. Christian persecution has been on going for more than 2,000 years and continues today. The conclusion drawn from what I have researched and presented in this chapter is: **Jesus correctly prophesied that Christians would be persecuted.**

Gamaliel: Human followers of Christ will disperse:

The physician Luke probably wrote the book of Acts post 63AD. In the fifth chapter beginning at verse 17 we read of the persecution of Jesus' disciples. Luke's account of this is of particular interest. Beginning at verse 33 we are told that the disciples were about to be put to death when a Pharisee named Gamaliel intervened. Addressing the Sanhedrin he speaks about someone called Theudas who had a following of about 400 who were dispersed after the death of Theudas. Then Judas the Galilean appeared and all of his followers scattered after his death. Gamaliel suggests to the members of the Sanhedrin that if the purpose

and activity of the disciples is of human origin it will fail. He then goes on to say at verse 39 **“But if it is from God, you will not be able to stop these men: you will only find yourselves fighting against God”** His speech persuaded the high priest and others to let the disciples go free. Over the last 2,000 years Christians have almost continually experienced persecution and death. This has not caused a decrease in the number of Christians, Christianity has increased from a handful of followers at the time of the death of Jesus Christ until today it totals more than 2.9 billion and is the world’s largest religion.

Before examining whether or not there is any evidence of God in nature I would offer one more thought. In Canada (2001 Census) 77 percent of our population indicated they are Christian. We are a passive people. We allow 23 percent of our countries’ population to dictate to us that we cannot recite the Lord’s Prayer in our schools while some school districts are considering setting aside space and time for Muslims to pray. Recently while at Foothills Hospital in Calgary an announcement was made over the P.A. system that Friday noon prayers for Muslims was about to begin. Merry Christmas is being replaced with Happy Holidays. Why do we allow this to happen?

Chapter Eight: Do Birds, Reptiles and Animals suggest the existence of God?

Green Sea Turtles:

We know from branding and banding programs that some species of birds, reptiles and animals migrate thousand of miles to and from breeding areas. Consider for a moment the following; green sea turtles mature at about 15 years of age. As adults they return to the sandy beach where they themselves were hatched from eggs to lay their eggs. The upper layer of eggs in the sand nest are warmer than the lower level and hatch as the female of the species while the lower layered eggs hatch as males. The baby turtles generally emerge at night. This apparently so they may have a chance to make it to the sea before day break and avoid being eaten by birds. How do the adult turtles find their way back to a sandy beach after swimming in the ocean for 15 or more years? Why does the temperature in the nest determine the sex of the hatchling? After emerging from the eggs how do they know to head for the sea and how do the birds know when the eggs are about to hatch? Instinct you might say. What is the origin of this instinct? Could it possibly be from God?

Salmon:

Again consider the salmon species off the west coast of Canada. The adults, after swimming in the Pacific Ocean for 4 or 5 years return to the same river tributaries that they were hatchlings in to spawn. How do they find their way back and again how do the males know to fertilize the eggs after the female lays them and why do the hatchlings swim out to sea?

Nesting Birds:

How do birds that migrate know when to start their journey and where they are going? It could be argued that they have been doing this for hundreds of thousand of years and that the younger birds just follow along with the older birds. But what about nesting birds? When and how do nesting birds learn how to build a nest? How do they know that the nest must be built in time for the female bird to lay her eggs? How do they know and understand that the eggs must be kept warm almost 24/7 until they hatch? Nesting birds hatch from eggs that are laid in a nest that was built by their parents. They certainly did not have the opportunity to watch and learn from their parents as they built the nest so how could they possibly know how to construct a suitable nest? Instinct you say. From what, from whom or from where did this instinct come from? Could it have originated with and come from God?

Ocean currents/ sea creatures:

Ocean/sea waters are constantly on the move. These currents flow in complex patterns affected by (ocean gyres) the wind, the water's salinity, the water's temperature, the bottom's topography and the earth's rotation. La Nina cooling and El Nino warming in the Pacific Ocean usually occurs approximately every 5 years and can cause serious weather extremes. Cold surface currents coming from the Polar Regions tend to flow toward the equator. These currents and how they flow influences climate and living conditions for land as well as marine plant and animal life. The North Atlantic drift, the California current, the Somali current and the Gulf Stream are names that we humans have given to some of these currents. We know that the Pacific Ocean has at least 19 currents while the Atlantic Ocean has at least 32 known currents. The Gulf Stream, one of the strongest known ocean currents, is warm, deep, fast and relatively salty. It separates ocean water from coastal water. We know that whales, dolphins, sea lions and porpoises plus many more sea animals and also some birds of the air follow ocean currents. I have just touched very briefly on ocean currents. If one wishes to learn more, just scrutinize any good encyclopedia or search the internet under ocean currents. There are very good videos and maps of various ocean currents at Dynamic Ocean Topography: Topex/Poseidon

or World Ocean Circulator experiment to name a few.

In the Bible's Old Testament Book of Psalms chapter eight (8) verse 8 (NIV) the Psalmist writes **"and the fish of the sea, all that swim in the paths of the sea"**. Could the writer when referring to the paths of the sea, be referring to the ocean currents as we know them? Could the Psalmist have known the sea creatures use these currents to move from one location to the next? If so, from whom or where did the Psalmist learn about the ocean currents? If the Bible is the Word of God, then God enlightened him.

Matthew Fontaine Maury who in 1855 wrote: "The Physical Geography of the Sea" certainly thought the Psalmist knew about ocean currents. Regarding Matthew Fontaine Maury discoveries, Henry Feyerabend in his book "God's World" pages 61 and 62 writes: *"One day, Maury was sick in bed. His son was reading the Bible to him, and particularly the words in the 8th Psalm: The fowl of the air, and the fish of the sea, and whatsoever passeth through the paths of the sea (psalm 8:8). Maury was thunderstruck. He said to himself, "if the Bible says that the ocean has paths, I will find those paths"*. He began to research ocean currents and wind conditions, storm paths and underwater shoal and reefs. Some years later, he completed a work that has been a standard for

pilots of the great ships to our day. He prepared wind and ocean charts that greatly reduced sailing time on many routes. He proved, by charting the Atlantic Ocean's bottom, that an underwater telegraph cable was feasible".

Feyerland in the above mentioned book points out many unusual natural phenomena. "God's World" is well worth the read. I should like to comment on another from page 17 of his book and from the Bible's book of Job. Have you ever used the expression or heard someone else use the expression: "by the skin of your teeth"?

Skin of your teeth:

In the Bible Old Testament book of Job chapter 19 verse 20 we read (NIV) "**I am nothing but skin and bones: I have escaped with only the skin of my teeth**". The translators of the Life Application Study Bible have translated this as "I have escaped death by the skin of my teeth". The King James Version of the Bible also reads "skin of my teeth" while the translators of The New American Bible translate this verse to read "with my flesh between my teeth" and comment on this verse saying that Job had lost so much body weight, was so thin that he probably was referring to his lips. Perhaps this is correct; however it could also be that Job was making reference to the **Nasmyth's membrane**. Alexander Nasmyth who died in 1848 and who was an oral dental surgeon to the British Queen Victoria and her husband

Prince Albert wrote an article in 1839. Information on the Nasmyth's membrane can be found @www.nasmyth/skin of your teeth. The article describing dental diseases and the structure of the teeth also includes a description of a transparent skin on the teeth of children that now bears his name. The Medical Dictionary describes this skin as follows: "*The primary enamel cuticle, consisting of two extremely thin layers (the inner one clear and structure less, the outer one cellular), covering the entire crown of newly erupted teeth and subsequently abraded by mastication; it is evident microscopically as an amorphous material between the attachment epithelium and the tooth. Synonyms are: cuticula dentis, adamantin membrane, dental cuticle, membrana adamantina, Nasmyth's cuticle, Nasmyth's membrane, skin of teeth*". Having lived at least 2,500 years ago, could Job have understood that baby teeth have skin? The Biblical account of Job is that he was a "man of God" a very righteous person and for that reason perhaps his words in verse 20 were God inspired.

Development of a fetus:

It is not my intent here to attempt to present a comprehensive account of the human reproductive systems. However, there is a very interesting account in the Bible's Old Testament book of Job. This book dates during the second millennium B.C. Here in chapter ten (10) beginning at verse nine (9)

we may be given a poetic account of a human egg being fertilized and the fetus development within the womb. In the NIV Study Bible it reads as follows: **“Did you not pour me out like milk and curdle me like cheese, clothe me with skin and flesh and knit me together with bones and sinews? You gave me life and showed me kindness.”** “Pour me out like milk” could be referring to the seminal fluid that is white in color and contains the spermatozoa. We know that during intercourse the seminal fluid deposited into the vagina allows the spermatozoa to work their way up the fallopian tubes where one and only one enters and fuses with the ovum. This fusion is termed impregnation, fertilization or conception. **The instant that it occurs marks the beginning of pregnancy. This fact should do away with any other arguments as to when human life begins. At the exact moment of this fusion the sex, the inherited traits and characteristics of the child are established.** This fusion gives the ovum the amazing power and fuel needed to nourish the reproduction of itself, first dividing into two cells, then four, then eight, then sixteen, this division and subdivision continues until eventually a solid mass is formed. This mass is called a morula. The morula makes its way down the tube and eventually attaches itself to the uterine wall (womb). As the cellular activity continues within the morula, fluid appears and the cells are pushed toward the periphery. This then forms a sac and the developing embryo is called a blastodermic vesicle. Within the mass

the cells are layered. The outmost are called ectoderm, the inner layer the entoderm and the third being the mesoderm. **“clothe me with skin and flesh”** could be a reference to the ectoderm. Formed from the ectoderm **are the skin with it’s appendages**, the salivary glands: the nasal passages, upper part of the pharynx , the anus, crystalline lens, the external ear, the sense organs and the entire nervous system to name a few. Also **“and knit me together with bones and sinew”** could be what takes place within the mesoderm. The mesoderm produces among others the urinary tract, the reproductive organs, the muscles, **the bones and connective tissues** and also the circulatory systems including the blood. Various small glands and tubes, the bladder, the pancreas, the lungs, the liver, the thyroid, the thymus and the alimentary canal are developed from the entoderm. Was Job referring to the entoderm when he wrote **“you gave me life”**? The above was extrapolated from Van Blarcom’s Obstetrical Nursing and from the internet @ Medical dictionary.

I would put forward that, prior to the development of the microscope we could not have known about the morula. It is, of course, so small that it cannot be seen with the naked eye. The microscope was first developed in Holland in about 1597. In 1655 Robert Hooke developed a usable compound microscope and in 1931 Max. Knoll and Ernest Ruska developed the electron microscope. These developments allow us to see objects as small as a human cell.

Again one has to ask the question, did Job understand 3000 to 4000 years ago fertilization and development of a fetus within the womb? I think not and believe that for Job to have written this account it would have had to come from some other source and in this case as with the writings of the other Biblical writers Job claims that it comes from his God and is the word of God.

Chapter Nine: Is the Biblical creation story in conflict with the scientific community?

Stephen Hawking and Leonard Mlodinow in their book “The Grand Design” put forward numerous theories as to the probable origin of the universe. One of which is “The Big Bang Theory”. I have chosen to examine these in Chapter Sixteen: World Religions: Atheism. This is not to suggest they are Atheists. I chose to discuss these theories in that chapter because it ties together the comments they made to those made by Christopher Hitchens regarding the Biblical historical location of Gibeon.

While vacationing on Princess Cays, an island in the Bahamas, my wife and I noticed a bumper sticker. It read “The Big Bang Theory God said; and **BANG** it was” This statement may be closer to the truth than some persons think for we read from the Christian Bible; **“Do you not know? Have you not yet heard? Was it not foretold you from the beginning? Have you not understood? Since the earth was founded he sits enthroned above the vault of the earth. He stretches out the heavens like a veil”** Isaiah 40:21-22 (TNAB). And also: **“Thus says the Lord God who created the heavens and stretched them out”** Isaiah 42:5 (TNAB). In the above biblical passages, is Isaiah’s God referring to what modern astrologers have dubbed The Big Bang

Theory in which they claim the universe and everything in it was created instantly? This explosion and succeeding events, created all the planets and stars within the various galaxies that are still expanding outward (stretches) (stretched). There is strong evidence suggesting that the Galaxies expanding out ward are still increasing in velocity. This of course is contrary to what happens on earth. Here any matter that becomes accelerated because of forces such as gravity, air and air borne dust and moisture working against it, cause it to slow down and eventually stop.

Theologians agree that the Bible's first five books Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers and Deuteronomy are almost exclusively the work of Moses with the composition date being most likely between 1446 and 1406 BC. It is highly unlikely that Moses would have written these books in his own hand writing. What is more likely to have been the case was Moses would have dictated to scribes (modern day secretaries) who would have then put the dictation to prose and herein lies the chance of perhaps getting the recorded events out of sequential order. In the Bible's second book, Exodus we find that Moses is a Biblical character that was born to Jewish slave parents in Egypt, was raised by the Pharaoh's daughter and in adulthood held a high position in the Egyptian court. God called Moses to become the leader of the Jewish people and to take them out of Egyptian bondage and into the land God

promised them. The Bible's story is the only reference that we have of Moses having ever lived upon this earth, as not one artifact has been found that can be attributed as to having belonged to Moses.

When one follows through the creation story in the first chapter of the Bible's Book of Genesis we are told that in the first day God created the heavens, the earth and light and that he separated the light from the darkness (**We are not told what form this light was, we can however assume that it was not the sun nor the moon as the Biblical account informs us that they were not created until the fourth day**). The second day God created an expanse to separate water from water. The third day God gathered the water into one place and caused the dry ground and vegetation to appear. Again in chapter 1 verses 13 through 19 we read that God made the sun to shine by day and the moon to shine by night. This was accomplished during the fourth day of creation. (**It is the belief of this writer that here a day is a period of time much longer than our 24 hour day, as the sun and moon as we know them were not created until the fourth day**). However, having said that I would also put forward the thought that a supreme being Christians call God capable of creating the heavens and the earth as we know them, if He so chooses to do so could accomplish each of these feats in a 24 hour period, a single day. The fifth day God created every living sea creature and the birds

of the air. During the sixth day God made the animals that live on dry land and then lastly but not least made man.

In the Bible's first book of Genesis attributed to be written by Moses (From the NIV Bible) chapter 1 verse 1 we read that **"In the beginning God created the heavens, and the earth"** Then in verse 9 of chapter one we read **"and God said Let the water under the sky be gathered to one place and let dry ground appear". "And it was so".** According to arguments put forward by the present day scientific community the heavens may have existed for more than 13 billions years and that the earth was formed about 4.5 billions years ago, in the Precambrian period. Within the Precambrian period there is the Proterozoic Era occurring about 2.5 billion years ago that stable continents first appeared above the surface of the water that covered the earth at that time.

Today the scientific community tells us, and I believe that this statement is widely accepted and is not challenged by anyone, that initially the earth's surface was at first covered with water and that the earth's major plates are still moving. This created our earth's continents. Those plates that are pushed upwards by those that are being pushed under them become land masses.

What is the probability that Moses who lived at least 3,450 years ago without divine intervention (from his God) knew that the

earth's surface was first covered with water and then dry land appeared?

Perhaps it would be fitting at this point to examine the Bible's creation story by comparing it to widely accepted geological eras to see if they are actually in harmony or if discrepancies do exist. The writers of the Illustrated Columbia Encyclopedia suggest that between the geological eras of the earth there are long periods of what they call erosions. They state "each era was followed by a long erosion interval". Let's look at what they have put forward and compare it to the Biblical account.

THE BIBLE'S CREATION STORY
FROM THE NIV STUDY BIBLE:
GEOLOGICAL ERAS ARE FROM THE
ILLUSTRATED COLUMBIA
ENCYCLOPEDIA:

"In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth" The beginning is all time prior to the Precambrian era and ending approximately 4.5 million years ago.

The first Day: "And God said let there be light and there was light: Unknown cannot be measured against geographical eras.

The second day: "And God said let there be an expanse between the waters to separate water from water God called the expanse sky" .
Unknown time frame presumably would have taken place before or during the early Precambrian Era.

The third day: Water gathered to one place, and some vegetation appears. Cambrian to early Permian period Paleozoic era dry ground appeared approximately 500-300 million years ago.

The fourth day: “God made lights in the expanse of the sky to separate the day from the night” “and let them serve as signs to mark the seasons and days and years” “and it was so God made two great lights, the earth’s, the moon and the sun’s greater to govern by day and the lesser to govern by night. Presumably the stars, moon and sun were made prior to the Precambrian era and this writer’s opinion is that the events of the fourth day refer to these movements being finalized.

The fifth day: God said “Let the water teem with living creatures and let birds fly above the earth across the expanse of the sky”. God created the great creatures of sea” “and every winged bird”. Late Permian era to early Cretaceous era 300- 100 million years ago.

The sixth day: God said “Let the land produce living creatures according to their kinds livestock, creatures that move along the ground and wild animals” then God said “let us make man in our image”. Late Cretaceous era to Peistocene epoch.

The Pleistocene epoch began approximately 1 million years ago and it was within this era that the writers of the Illustrated Columbia Encyclopedia suggest that man first appeared. Raymond J. Nogar in his book “The Wisdom of Evolution” also suggests that man first appeared during the Pleistocene period. This of course is in conflict with the Biblical genealogy of Adam, which can be traced within the Bible, which

places Adam as having lived some 7,000 years ago. Nogar suggests that apes appeared during the Miocene, 2.5 million years ago and that man started to evolve from them during the Pliocene, 1.3 million years ago. Dr. Nogar, a Catholic after carefully weighing all the evidence accepts evolution as the best available account of the genesis of the world and the living man.

Another Catholic, Sr. Loretta Pastva, SND in her book “Great religions of the World” on page 26 when addressing the behavior of today’s chimp’s states: “We might wonder, is this chimp’s behavior similar to the way that the early ancestors to us Homo Sapiens first responded to the wonders of the natural world? Just how and when worship originated must remain pure conjecture. Yet the first traces of human society indicate that early people everywhere worshipped consciously and deliberately”. Then on page 27 she continues by stating that as far back as 100,000 years there is evidence of religious ceremonies being held, including evidence of belief in spirits and evidence of a belief in afterlife. The above comments from Sr. Pastva tells us that she also accepts at least in part what scientists put forward regarding when man first appeared upon the face of this earth.

I can believe in evolution, however it must be controlled: in the animal kingdom for evolution to have taken place male and female of the species must have evolved at the same time. The probability of this occurring by random chance is slim to none. The evidence supporting The Big Bang theory is examined in chapter seventeen. Today we now understand that Galaxies are and continue to expand outward or away from each other. This strongly supports “The Big Bang Theory”. Any explosion of combustion material here on earth generates heat. Firing of a small arms gun, the igniting and explosion of the gun powder contained within the bullet’s casing, generates immense heat. So one has to ask the question could any live cell plant or animal survive the heat that must have been generated when “The Big Bang” occurred. This of course does not answer the question of why the scientific community and the Bible are at odds with when man first appeared. Perhaps God has given us clues that we may have overlooked, to answer this question in the Bible, in the Book of Enoch, in the Apocrypha books and other ancient written texts.

My copy of The Illustrated Columbia Encyclopedia, that the above data was extracted from, was printed a number of years ago and of course there have been more

recent discoveries that place man's first appearance much older than the Pleistocene era. For example the following article appeared in the National Geographic News September 20, 2006. "Perhaps the world's most famous early human ancestor, the 3.2-million-year-old ape "Lucy" was the first *Australopithecus afarensis* skeleton ever found, though her remains are only about 40 percent complete". Discovered in 1974 by paleontologist Donald C. Johanson in Hadar, Ethiopia, *A. afarensis* was for about 20 years the earliest known human ancestor species"

And also from the National Geographic Magazine October 1, 2009 an article by Jamie Shreve reads as follows. "Scientists today announced the discovery of the oldest fossil skeleton of a human ancestor. The find reveals that our forebears underwent a previously unknown stage of evolution more than a million years before Lucy, the iconic early human ancestor specimen that walked the Earth 3.2 million years ago. The centerpiece of a treasure trove of new fossils, the skeleton—assigned to a species called *Ardipithecus ramidus*—belonged to a small-brained, 110-pound (50-kilogram) female nicknamed Ardi".

It would appear, based on information available; the Bible's creation story is homogenous with the geological eras except

perhaps when man first appeared. The discrepancy is not in what geological era but how many years ago man first appeared Biblical 7,000 versus Scientific 4.2 million years ago. How could this be?

There are only clues to this mystery in the Bible and perhaps also in the books of Enoch and Esdras. In the Bible in Genesis chapter 6 beginning at verse one we read “When men began to increase in number on the earth, and daughters were born to them, the sons of God saw that the daughters of men were beautiful and they married any of them they choose” (NIV). Then at verse 4 of chapter 6 references is made to: The “Nephilims were on the earth in those days” (NIV). Who were the sons of God and who were the Nephilims? In the seventh chapter of the Book of Enoch, Enoch writes a similar story about the sons of God taking wives from among the daughters of men. Enoch however expands the story to include the following: **“(11). And the women conceiving brought forth giants. (12). Whose stature was each three hundred cubits. These devoured all which the labour of men produced; until it became impossible to feed them; (13). When they turned themselves against men, in order to devour them; (14). And began to injure birds, beast, reptiles and fishes, to eat their flesh one after another and to drink their**

blood. (15). Then the earth reproved them the unrighteous.” According to Enoch, the offspring of the sons of God and of the daughters of men were very large, 300 cubits would be approximately 450 feet tall or 450 feet long. Could Enoch be describing dinosaurs? We have not yet unearthed a dinosaur fossil this large. We have discovered fossilized remains of **Amphicoelias** whose total length exceeds 200 feet. What was Enoch referring to when he states that the earth reproved them?

Another mystery is found in the books of Esdras, in his second book he states that God made two living creatures. One he called Enoch and placed him on dry land and one he called Leviathan and placed him in the waters. Esdras does not enlighten us as to whether or not the living creature made by God and placed on dry land was a man. We do however know the Enoch, Esdras is referring to is not the Biblical Enoch who was 7th from Adam and was the author of The Book of Enoch. Esdras then proceeds to tell us that sometime later God then made the first man and called him Adam.

Before leaving the creation story/evolution debate one must consider that the scientific community and also atheists are convinced that evolution has occurred.

However, they keep looking for the missing link. Perhaps the missing link is right before our eyes and we just cannot see it or accept it. As stated earlier my thoughts are that evolution probably did occur, however it has to be planned evolution. In the animal world for evolution to have taken place, male and female of the species must have evolved at the same time; if not then we could not possibly have had babies. Consider also ants that apparently have not changed (evolved) for at least 100 million years. The appearance of crocodile and alligators has not changed in the last 65 million years. Consider some species of sharks; they have not changed in the last 100 million years. The coelacanth thought to have become extinct some 65 to 70 million years ago did not. Fishermen have caught them in nets in 1938 and again in 1952 off the east coast of Africa, off the coast of Madagascar, Mozambique and Indonesia. Consider the young of mammals, the ones that are born blind and hairless. Why has the female kangaroo a pouch into which her baby, after 35 days of gestation must climb into it in order to complete the gestation period. Why didn't the kangaroo just build a nest like rabbits, mice and rats do to protect and nourish their blind hairless offspring?

Raymond J. Nogar a biologist, a theologian and a Dominican priest, in his

book "The Wisdom of Evolution" puts forward some very strong arguments in favor of planned evolution. It is not my intent to debate the arguments put forward by Nogar except to say that J. Franklin Ewing, S.J. Department of Anthropology Fordhams University comments on Nogar's book as follows: "*After careful and brilliantly clear analysis of the scientific facts that confirm biological evolution, Father Nogar shows that far from undermining the great traditional truths of faith, evolution reveals them as more deeply meaningful than ever before*". And Theodosius Dorzhansky of the Rockefeller Institute, New York comments on Nogar's book as follows: "*His careful and conscientious weighing of the evidence leads Dr. Nogar to accept evolution as the best available account of the genesis of the living world and of man. He regards this account fully compatible with the philosophy of Thomism and with the doctrines of the Catholic Church*".

For now, whether or not evolution, planned or otherwise, happened remains a mystery, perhaps some day someone will uncover archeological items that will put all the missing pieces in place.

Part One: Summary and Conclusion:

Unlike the other religions examined, Judaism and Christianity strongly suggest that a Supreme Supernatural Being (God) does in fact exist. The above statement is based on the following: Some persons have experienced unusual encounters. They attribute these to be angelic visitations. Other people have been cured of disease other than by medical intervention. There is strong evidence that Biblical prophecies, particularly those made by Jesus actually did happen. Biblical writers by their own admission state that God revealed the future to them by visions, by angelic visitations and by God himself. If God does not exist, then what possible other argument can be put forward to explain the following?

How does one explain the experience my wife and I had south of Las Vegas Sunday April 22, 2001 when a car and police officer mysteriously appeared to help us and then disappeared? Perhaps it was one of God's angels in disguise.

What explanation can be offered for what Clifford C. and his wife Charlotte experienced when a blonde headed woman, who no one present seemed to know, suddenly appeared to sing with them and then just seemed to vanish.

How does one explain how Caleb Teodorescu who may have been without oxygen and a heart beat for up to 55 minutes is alive today and not have any brain damage? Caleb's father suggests it is one of God's miracles.

How does one explain Rose and Tony K's experience in Bismarck N.D. during the Canadian Thanksgiving weekend in 1975? Rose and Tony suggest it was God answering prayers offered that Tony should survive and not have brain damage.

How does one explain the experience of George C. and his family? George and his wife Marion will tell you they were visited by two of God's angels.

How does one explain Colton Burpo's experience recorded in the book "Heaven is for Real" by Todd Burpo? Colton's parents are convinced that their son, at age 3 years nine months, was dead, went to heaven and then was returned to tell us that heaven; God and Jesus are for real.

How does one explain that Alex Malarkey is still alive considering the injuries he received to C1 and C2. Not only was he able to accurately describe the events immediately after the accident, he described heaven, angels and Jesus.

How does one explain the experience of all those people that Dr. Raymond Moody wrote about in his book “Life after Life?”

How does one explain the experiences of those persons who shared with Fr. Coughlin what happened recorded in Fr. Coughlin’s book He’s Alive Volume 11?

Is there any other explanation other than Jesus for Lil’s experience? Lil is convinced she was with Jesus.

Has chemotherapy treatment, God’s intervention or both played a roll in my wife Susan’ cancers being inactive since December of 2008?

As discussed in “Sainthood” unexplained events Christians refer to as miracles are still happening in today’s world.

There are many Jewish writers and historians who have written about Jesus. Many of them admit Jesus existed, however they deny He was/is their Messiah. I chose to reference only three, they are Josephus, Haim Cohn, and Sulamith Ish Kosher

The life and times of the person known as Jesus Christ fulfilled all except two Biblical prophecies foretold sometimes centuries before his birth. The two not yet completed are his return to earth and his judgment and Kingly rule.

During his ministry Jesus prophesied: the temple in Jerusalem would be taken apart stone by stone. Jesus prophesied before his death that the temple would be destroyed and that not one stone would be left one upon the other. This was fulfilled 30-40 years later when the Roman soldiers took the temple walls apart stone by stone to recover the gold between them. Jesus prophesied of increased earthquakes and famine: prophesied that persons would claim to be prophets and also claim to be him and that Christians would be persecuted. Jesus warns of false prophets and many coming in his name (The Messiah) in the last 100 years there have been hundreds of persons claiming to be prophets and the Messiah.

Birds and animals have what we call instinct. What is the source of this instinct? Many persons believe it is from God.

The biblical writer of the 8th Psalm in verse eight tells us there are pathways in the sea. Sea currents were not discovered or understood until they were mapped by Matthew Fortune Maury in 1855.

The Biblical prophet Job who lived approximately 2,500 years ago writes “the skin of my teeth”. If I were able to ask Job how he knew this I am sure his response would be that his God told him. The fact that initially we have skin on our teeth was discovered and then documented by an

English dentist Dr. Nasmyth who passed away in 1848.

Centuries before the invention of the microscope Job accurately described fertilization and development of a fetus.

The biblical creation story appears to be harmonized with what the scientific community offers except for when man appeared.

My research found within the pages of the Bible 50 prophecies made regarding Jesus and an additional 26 statements and prophecies that are historically verifiable. Is this not unquestionable evidence that a Supreme Being exists and of Jesus being who he said he was? Jesus claimed he was The Son of God.

“Fear God and keep his commandments, for this are the whole duty of man. For God will bring deed into judgment, including every hidden thing, whether it is good or evil”. These words were written by King Solomon who was probably the wisest of the Kings of Judah and Israeli. He reigned from approximately 960 BC until his death in 930 BC.

I will now examine the history and the development of the Books of the Apocrypha and also the Christian Holy Book, their Bible.

Part Two: History and development of the Holy Books, Archaeological discoveries and Old Testament Biblical Prophecies.

Chapter Ten: The Holy Books.

Apocrypha:

There are fifteen ancient manuscripts known to Protestants as apocrypha. In recent years they have been removed from their Bible. The Catholic Bible has included seven of the above 15 books. The Apocrypha as historical documents presents problems and challenges as scholars have not been able to accurately date them nor in some cases have they been able to ascertain who the authors were. The two books of Esdras do not fall into this category as we know the author was Esdras. A listing of the books of the Apocrypha is given later in the discussions regarding the Catholic Bible. Harvey Minkoff, PhD. "In the introduction to The Missing Books of the Bible Volume 1" cautions us as follows: *"Scholars have tried to determine the date and place of the Apocrypha's composition by studying its ideas, language, and possible references to historical events. But scholars' solutions are often controversial. Their suggested dates of composition may range over hundreds of years. They can only identify places as probably Alexandria or Possible Palestine and they may interpret an evil kingdom as*

Babylon, Greece or Rome. In addition the books themselves show many signs of tampering. A single sentence or word inserted into a passage centuries later can change its entire meaning, and throw off all scholarly calculations. Such may be true for the other books of the Bible as well, but it's less likely. Because these books were more widely circulated, quoted, and studied, people would probably have quickly noticed changes or errors in a copy. But these cautions should not stop readers from discovering the superb literature and wisdom of the Apocrypha".

To obtain a greater understanding on Christianity the Books of the Apocrypha are well worth studying. They provide us with an insight into the thoughts of persons of Jewish faith living between the time of the last of the Old Testament writers and those of the New Testament. They fill in the period in Israel of Jewish contact with Greece and Rome. Israel is under Persian rule when the Old Testament ends and is under Roman rule when the New Testament begins.

There are some interesting comments in the books of Esdras that I would like to point to. In the second book Esdras gives his genealogy back 17 generations. Included in his lineage are Aaron, Levi, Eleazar and Heli. Aaron was the brother of Moses who led the Jewish people out of Egyptian bondage. The Jewish people were divided into 12 tribes, Levi, was appointed the first priest of the priestly tribe. Eleazar, was a Jewish high

priest and Heli was the father of Joseph, Mary's husband.

Esdras tells us that he was in exile in the land of the Medes during the reign of Artaxerxes (spelling) king of the Persians. Artaxerxes reigned from 456-424BC. In 2nd Esdras chapter 2 and after a long preamble as to how one should live their life at verse 23 we read as follow: "*Wheresoever thou findest the dead, take them and bury them and I will give thee the first place in my resurrection*". To my knowledge resurrection, one's body being raised from the dead is not mentioned in the Old Testament of the Protestant Bible. It is however mentioned in the Roman Catholic Bible 2nd Maccabees chapter 12 verse 43. Resurrection of the body is a predominate theme in the New Testament. Esdras beginning at verse 42 of this chapter claims to have a vision of Heaven where in the resurrected souls could not be counted and in their midst stood a **"young man of a high stature, taller than all the rest, and upon every one of their heads he set crowns"** Later on we find out that Esdras is told by an angel that this young man is Jesus Christ the Son of God. The person who claimed he was Jesus Christ the Son of God was not born until almost 450 years later.

In the New Testament of the Bible, we are told that believers in heaven may be awarded as many as seven crowns. The crowns and where they are found is as follows: (1) an

incorruptible crown, 1st Corinthians 9:25: (2) a crown of righteousness, 2nd Timothy 4:8: (3) a crown of rejoicing, 1st Thessalonians 2:19: a crown of life, James 1:12 and Revelations 2:10: (4) a crown of glory, 1st Peter 5:4: (5) a crown for God's grace, 1st Peter 5:5: (6) & (7) crowns for prophets and a righteous man's rewards, Matthew 10:41-42. Could these be the crowns that Esdras saw in his above mentioned vision?

In chapter six beginning at verse 6 speaking to Esdras his God tells him that the account of Jacob and Esau fighting within their mother's womb for position to be the first born and therefore have the birth right of the first male child. The account here and in the Bible's book of Genesis chapter 25 beginning at verse 19, is that Esau was born first with Jacob hanging onto his heel. God at verse 9 tells Esdras that **“For Esau is the end of the world and Jacob is the beginning of it that followeth”**. The descendents of Esau became known as the Edomites and hundreds of centuries later during the campaigns of the Maccabees in the second century BC were wiped off the face of the earth in 132 BC.

The descendents of Jacob are the Jewish people of today. Without divine intervention how could Esdras have known that the descendents of Esau would forever disappear from the face of the earth? Esdras tells us that his God told him. The account of the birth and life of Esau and Jacob can be found in the Old

Testament in the book of Genesis chapter 25 beginning at verse 19.

The Calgary Herald July 8, 2011 carried an article that researchers in Toronto Canada identified and isolated the stem cell for human blood. According to this article this may open the way for better and more effective treatment for a wide range of diseases. Esdras at verse 21 of chapter six when he is speaking of “end times” the time just before the end of the world as we now know it ceases to exist writes as follows: **“the women with child shall bring forth untimely children of three and four months old, and they shall live and be raised up”**. This statement prompted me to telephone an acquaintance who spent the last 10-15 years of her nursing career in a large neonatal unit. During our telephone conversation she told me that presently babies delivered around 24 weeks have a chance of making it, however they almost always have health issues. Upon searching the internet I found that the youngest surviving baby was born Oct 21, 2007 at 21 weeks 6 days in Miami Florida.

The Calgary Herald on Sunday January 22nd 2012 page A2 printed an article about a premature baby being discharged after five months from a Los Angeles hospital. Melinda Star Guido born 16 weeks premature and at birth weighing 270 grams or 9.51 ounces is the third smallest baby to survive.

Could it be that sometime in the future with advances being made in medical technology and stem cell research that, premature babies born at the end of 1st or beginning of the 2nd trimester can be expected to live? **If sometime in the future this were to happen it would solidify the existence of Esdras' God, a supreme being, one that is also known to Christians as God.**

In the seventh chapter of Esdras beginning at verse 17 and carrying on through and including 29 we read the account of Esdras' God speaking to and telling him of things to come including the birth and death of Jesus. Beginning at verse 28 we read as follows: **“For my son Jesus shall be revealed with those that be with him, and they that remain shall rejoice for four hundred years. After these years shall my son Christ die, and all men that have life”**. We now know that Esdras lived and prophesied four hundred years before Jesus Christ was born. It would appear that Esdras' God told him the approximate time when His (God's) Son was to be born. Through out the rest of his book Esdras is told of futuristic events such as the biblical account of the trial and death of Jesus.

The books of Esdras are interesting reading; however, I should now like to return my attention to the Torah the Jewish holy book and the Christian Bible.

Judaism's Torah:

Judaism's Holy Book is divided into three sections and according to their grouping contains 24 books. The first section, The Torah also called The Pentateuch, is made up of the five books of Moses, and they are: Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers and Deuteronomy. Attached to the Torah is the Talmud containing two parts the Mishnah (the law) and the Gemara (a discussion of the law and related subjects). The second section, The Neviim or Prophets, is made up of the eight books of the writings of the Jewish Prophets. They further divide the Prophets into Former Prophets and Later Prophets. Former prophets (4) books consisting of the books of Joshua, Judges, 1st and 2nd Samuel and 1st and 2nd Kings. Their Later Prophets (4) are the books of Isaiah, Jeremiah, and Ezekiel and The Twelve. The Twelve is a grouping of 12 prophetic books. Included in The Twelve are the following books: Hosea, Joel, Amos, Obadiah, Jonah, Micah, Nahum, Habakkuk, Zephaniah, Haggi, Zechariah and Malachi. The third section Ketuvim or Writings has two parts, one entitled Emeth and the other entitled Megilloth. These two consists of eleven books of writings, Emeth contains the Biblical books of Psalms, the book of Proverbs and the book of Job. The book of Megilloth contains (5 scrolls) they are the biblical books of, the Song of Solomon, Ruth, Lamentations, Ecclesiastes and Esther. The last two are considered by the Jews as one book. The remaining four books are Daniel,

Ezra-Nehemiah, 1st Chronicles and 2nd Chronicles. All of the preceding books except for the commentaries the Mishnah, the Gemara, make up the Old Testament of the Protestant Bible.

The Protestant Bible:

The Protestant Bible (excluding Catholicism) is made up of two sections. They are The Old and The New Testaments. The Old Testament is made up of 39 books, grouped as follows: Law (5), History (12), Poetry (5), Major Prophets (5) and Minor Prophets (12). The New Testament section contains 27 books some of which were written by members of Jesus Christ's inner circle. The Bible is commonly referred to as "The Canon". In the Protestant's canon all 15 books of the Apocrypha are excluded.

The Roman Catholic Bible:

The Catholic Bible is also divided into two parts, the Old and New Testaments. The New Testament contains the same 27 books that make up the New Testament in the Protestant Bible. However, in the Catholic Bible, the Old Testament has a total of 46 books. In addition to the thirty nine books of the Jewish canon and the Old Testament of the Protestant canon there are seven (7) books that the Protestants rejected. These books are known by Protestants as books of the Apocrypha. They are: the book of Tobit, the

book of Judith, the book of Wisdom, the book of Sirach, the book of Baruch and 1st and 2nd Maccabees. The Catholic Bible also excludes the following Apocrypha books; 1st and 2nd Esdras, The rest of the chapters of the book of Esther, The Epistle of Jeremy, The Prayer of Azariah, and The History of Susanna, The History of the Destruction of Bel and the Dragon and the Prayer of Manasses.

The History and development of the Bibles:

The Bible used by both Protestants and Roman Catholics is not a single book. It is a collection of writings by many different authors. It is not a scientific textbook. It is a historical document that also puts forth and sets religious truths that are designed to manifest to man a pathway to eternal salvation. The books of the Old Testament were written over a period of many centuries beginning with the five books of Moses. The first book Genesis probably dates to about 1,400BC with the last book Malachi probably written between 455-433BC. The 27 books of the New Testament were all written within the first 100 years after the death of Jesus Christ. Within in the Bible God is all powerful and terrifying yet He is also tender and loving. This collection of genealogy, stories, sacred texts, prophecies, prayers, philosophies, and proverbs, rules of conduct, conflicts, wars waged, gruesome events, torture endured, of displaced persons, love stories, marriage, birth and death, miracles performed, blessings received, historical places, kingdoms and

kings, historical events and the salvation of ones' soul were eventually accepted by Christians as Holy Scripture. The Old Testament books were originally composed in closely related languages, Aramaic and Hebrew. This was the book, the book we now know as The Old Testament that Jesus knew and referred to in his teachings.

A Greek translation of the Old Testament, the Septuagint originated in a Jewish community in Alexandria in Egypt between 200-100BC. This translation named after the seventy translators (Latin septuaginta for 70) was familiar to many non-Hebrew-speaking Jews who did not live in their homelands of Judah and Israel. Over the years there were other Greek translations with many more texts added to the Septuagint. These were studied and respected by the Jews but never included in their Bible. Additionally translations appeared in other languages: Syriac, Coptic, Armenian, Arabic and "The Vulgate" a Latin translation that first appeared in North Africa and another in Southern Gaul around 150AD. Over the next 230 years many more Latin translations appeared. This created a problem for the Latin Church (Roman Catholic) as to which version to use in the liturgy and theological dialogue.

Saint Jerome, born February 347 died September 30th 420AD was a gifted scholar. Around 382AD Pope Damasus 1st commissioned the gifted Jerome to produce a bible, a version that could meet the Pope's

expectation of becoming an authorized version. Saint Jerome put his heart and soul into this project. He worked cautiously and laboriously over the next 48 years from his home (a cave) in the town of Bethlehem. I had the opportunity to visit this site while on tour in Israel in 2005. Saint Jerome between 382AD and 390AD translated the Greek version of the Old Testament into Latin. During the years 390AD to 405AD he translated the Hebrew version into Latin. During the last years of his life from 405AD to 420AD he commented on and gave homilies on various books of the Old and New Testaments. Jerome's translation became known after The Council of Trent in 1546 as the Vulgate the official canon of the Roman Catholic Church. For his tireless effort Jerome has been made a saint of the church. An English translation of the Vulgate was adopted by the Roman Catholic Church in 1970. Within its pages, seven of the fifteen books of the Apocrypha are included. (*Source Catholic Encyclopedia (@) www.Catholicencyclopedia.ca.*)

The following photograph is of the statue of Saint Jerome and the modern day church that has been built over the cave that he lived in. We actually had the opportunity to go down into the cave that Saint Jerome called home for most of his adult life. It was very small and perhaps twenty feet under ground. In Saint Jerome's time there were a set of very narrow steps leading up to the surface exiting by a very narrow opening.



Martin Luther after breaking away from the Catholic Church rejected all the books of the Apocrypha. However he did collect them into an appendix. In 1611 King James of England commissioned a number of scholars to translate the Vulgate into English. This project was completed in 1615 and this Latin to English translation contained all the books of the Apocrypha. Within a few years printers began excluding the Apocrypha books from subsequent printings and by 1827 the British Bible Society had stopped including them. The American Bible Society soon followed. Thus the Apocrypha has become the missing books of the Bible. Attempting to make it more user-friendly, the Vulgate, the original Catholic Bible and the original King James translation of the Protestant Bible, has over

the years under gone many revisions. The editors of The Time chart of Biblical History in addition to the above listing provide us with the following Bible history:

The Peshitta translated into Old Syriac dates to about 100AD.

Early vernaculars are as follows:

The Egyptian Coptic 3rd century.

The Ethiopian 4th century.

The Armenian and Georgian 5th century.

The Arabic in the 8th century.

The Gothic published in the 4th century.

The Old Latin published in the 2nd century.

The Lindisfarne Gospels dates to around 700.

The Wycliffe Bible translated to old English in 1382.

The first printed Bible the Gutenberg in 1455.

The Complutensian Polyglots printed in Spain in 1516.

Tyndale's bible printed in 1525.

Eastern Europe printed in 863.

The Geneva Bible printed in 1557.

Clementine's vulgate printed in 1546.

The King James Version was published in 1615.

Revisions to the English language bibles are as follows:

Wesley's Methodist in 1755.

The Quaker Bible in 1764.

Thompson in 1808.

Unitarian in 1819.

The Woman's bible in 1876.

The English revised published the New Testament in 1881 with the Old Testament following in 1885.

An American Standard Version was published in 1901 followed by the Revised Standard Version and the New English Bible in 1970. As missionaries went forward to evangelize the nations they had the Bible translated into the language of the country that they were being missionaries in. This resulted in at least 500 more translations.

There have also been errors made in translations as follows:

The Wicked Bible in 1631 left out the crucial word “not” in one of the Ten Commandments thus making it read “thou shalt commit adultery”.

The Vinegar Bible of 1717 substituted “vinegar” for “vineyard” in Luke chapter 20.

One can immediately challenge the authenticity of the Bible after having undergone so many revisions and translations. Having said that, the scholars who translated today’s Catholic Bible: The New American Bible and the Protestant Bible: The NIV Study Bible meticulously translated them from the original Hebrew, Aramaic and Greek and so these bibles widely used today have undergone only one translation.

The Bible is also a significant historical document containing information about and the names of historical persons, ancient civilizations and kings, names of lost cities and forgotten places. In addition to persons

and places commented on throughout this book and until archeological diggings produced various artifacts the following persons and places mentioned in the Bible were only known to us from the pages of the Bible.

The following abbreviated sampling of these indicates the Bible is in fact a historical document. Assyrian kings: Ashurnasirpal 11 is mentioned in Nehemiah 5, Shalmaneser 111 is mentioned in 1st Kings, Adad-nirari 111 is mentioned in 2nd Kings, Shalmanser 1V is mentioned in 2nd Kings, Esar haddon is mentioned in 2nd Kings and Nehemiah. The same is true for the following places: In Geneses 10 and 11 the land of Shinar and three of its cities are mentioned Babel, Erech and Accach. Babel where the Chaldeans/ Babylonians were trying to build a tower to heaven is thought to have been within the city of Babylon. The Catholic encyclopedia gives three possible locations within that old city, however they also point out that the evidence is inconclusive as to Babel's exact location. The ruins of Accach have never been found. Within the ruins of Erech, a great temple city, archeologist have unearthed one of the earliest forms of pictorial writing that dates back to the 4th century BC. Megiddo mentioned in 1st Kings, dates to around 7,000BC and archeological diggings there have unearthed the ruins of at least 26 different layers, that is to say 26 cities built upon the ruins of each other. Megiddo was occupied continuously for approximately

6,500 years eventually being destroyed and never rebuilt in the 5th or 6th century BC. The following two photographs give an insight in how advanced their civilization actually was.

The following photograph is the mound that is the ruins of Megiddo. Our guide is standing beside a horse watering trough that was used by King Solomon's armies and dates back to at least 930BC. Apparently the stable was large enough to house approximately 1,000 horses.



The following photograph is of the aqueduct system at Megiddo. Inside the city there is a vertical shaft extending down 125 steps. At the bottom of these steps there is a

large water collection basin. Cut through solid rock for a distance of a few hundred feet is a rather large tunnel leading away from the collection basin to a fresh water spring that was located outside the city's fortified walls. The spring's water flow was diverted into this tunnel and the actual spring was camouflaged and hidden so that attacking armies did not know its location. This system provided fresh water to the city while it was under attack. The original rock hewn-steps still exist however, today they are not used. This structure is very similar to that at Gibeon referred to below and is a good indicator of advanced civilizations at that time.



The above is a photograph of the water system at Meggido: in this photograph my

wife Susan is the person in the center. She is the 5th person from the right and also the 5th person from the left.

Some Biblical events particularly those in the Old Testament are perhaps beyond human comprehension. As an example the Hebrews as they were known back then, after coming out of Egypt and having wandered in the desert for 40 years were allowed to cross the Jordan and begin conquering the Canaanite tribes living there. This was the “Promised Land”, the land promised to them by their God. Their leader Joshua was instructed by his God to have his soldiers kill every living thing in the cities that his God was going to deliver into his hands. The events of Joshua’s campaigns can be found in the Bible’s book of Joshua. The Biblical account is that Joshua defeated a total of thirty- one ruling kings. The first city taken by Joshua was the ancient and well fortified city of Jericho and according to the Biblical account, not one living thing within the city survived. I should like to leave the events of Joshua taking Jericho and return to address them in a later chapter.

During the campaign to conquer the “Promised Land”, according to the Bible’s book of Joshua chapter 10 beginning at verse 10, Joshua’s God took a very active roll in this campaign. Here we read that he hurled large hailstones down from the sky killing the forces of the five Amorite kings as they fled Gibeon. Here also Joshua prayed to his God to stop the sun, to make it stand still so he

could finish the battle and kill all the Amorites who remained in Gibeon. The Biblical account is that the sun stopped still about midday and delayed going down for a full and a part of a day. How could this happen, did the earth would stop in it's rotation for a full day? Was the sun's movement some how altered to cause it to continue to shine for more than a full day? This incident is also recorded by the writers of the Catholic Bible's book of Sirach chapter 46:4: and also in The Book of Jashar: Joshua's conflicts: B63-B65. In Joshua we are told the Sun stood still for a day and a part. In Sirach we are told the sun stood still so that two days became one. The writer of The Book of Jashar tells us that the Sun and Moon stood still for six and thirty moments. Unfortunately we do not know how long the period of time six and thirty moments might be. One might wonder if this is the reason why Enoch's year was exactly 364 days long while our year is presently 365 ¼ days long. More on this subject will be offered in our discussions on the Book of Enoch and also in chapter 16, World Religions: Atheism.

The ruins of Gibeon are located on the southern edge of what is today the Palestinian village of el Jib and dates to around 945-924BC. Gibeon is also mentioned in a list of cities on the wall of the Amun temple at Karnak. James B. Pritchard of the University of Pennsylvania excavated the Gibeon site during his six expeditions between 1956 and 1962. This pool is a water shaft measuring 37

feet wide and 82 feet deep connecting two water tunnels. It brought water into the city from springs outside the city walls that were hidden from view.

Unearthing the Pool of Gibeon is an important Biblical find. Gibeon is first mentioned in 2nd Samuel chapter 2: a book most likely written in the 7th century BC. The Biblical account of a scene at the Pool of Gibeon is that of a fierce battle wherein David's men defeated the men of Saul's army. Unearthing the pool of Gibeon does not prove God's existence; it does however solidify the Bible as an historical document. Pictured below is a photograph of the unearthed Pool of Gibeon



The above photograph is of the pool (well) at Gibeon.

In Section Three: Chapter sixteen you will note that Gibeon is the place that an atheist Christopher Hitchens claimed has never been found and therefore does not exist.

Stephen Hawkings and Leonard Mlodinow also comment on this event in their book “The Grand Design”. I will examine their comments in Chapter Sixteen.

Chapter Eleven: Archeological Sites and Language Development:

To understand the Biblical message and to comprehend Biblical history, one needs to have some understanding of findings at archeological sites as well as some perception of how the written language evolved. Long before God called the Chaldean Abraham from Ur (Chapter entitled "The birth of Israel and of Judaism)". There were advanced civilizations in the near east. The Egyptians had developed their hieroglyphic beyond the primitive stages and were building huge structures.

Large cities were built along the Euphrates and Tigris rivers many of which were mentioned only in the Bible. We did not know them to exist until their ruins were discovered. For example in the 10th chapter of Genesis beginning at verse 8 we are told that Nimrod a grandson of Noah the Biblical flood/ark character, built the great cities of Babylon, Erech, Akkad and Calneh in Shinar and in Assyria he built Nineveh, Ir (Ur), Rehoboth, Resen and Calah. Unearthing the ruins of any one of these cities would then prove that Noah, the biblical flood character, and his grandson Nimrod did in fact live upon the face of this earth. Nimrod could be Hebrew for the historical king Sargon the 1st.

Excavations at Nineveh and Babylon are discussed below; however Erech is also of interest. Erech, the Hebrew name for it was Uruk, the Greek name for it was Orchoe

(modern day Tall al-Warka), was one of the most important cities in ancient Mesopotamia located northwest of Ur (Tall Al-Muqayyar) in southeastern Iraq. The site has been excavated from 1928 onward by the German Oriental Society and the German Archeological Institute. Erech was one of the greatest cities of Sumer and was enclosed by brickwork walls about 6 miles (10 km) in circumference, which according to legend were built by the mythical hero Gilgamesh. Within the walls, excavations traced successive cities that date from the prehistoric Ubaid period, perhaps before 5000 BC, down to Parthian times (126 BC–AD 224). Urban life in what is known as the Erech–Jamdat Nasr period (*c.* 3500–*c.* 2900 BC) is more fully illustrated at Erech than at any other Mesopotamian city.

In Palestine cities such as Jericho, Megiddo, Beth-shean and Lachish, heavily fortified and well built communities, appeared. Recent archeological finds date the establishment of Jericho to at least 13,000 years ago.

Clay tablets found during excavations of these sites indicate that universal written languages also existed at this time. The written language of Elam dates to around 3000BC, the language of the Hureans to around 2500BC followed by the language of the Urartic and the Mitanni. The relationship to these civilizations and the biblical account follows.

Archeological sites located in the Euphrates River valley are of particular interest because according to the Book of Genesis of the Old Testament God created man and placed him in the Garden of Eden. In Genesis we read that a river went forth from the Garden of Eden (Genesis 2:7-14) and then parted into four rivers two of the four still exist. They are the Euphrates and the Tigris. The other two the Pishon and Gihon, no longer exist perhaps because centuries ago the river's channels changed. Another possible explanation regarding the disappearance of the Pishon and Gihon can be found in the Readers Digest Mysteries of the Bible pages 24 and 25. Here they suggest the area that was the Garden of Eden may now lie under the waters of the Persian Gulf. On page 25 referencing a map of the area we read; *“Geological investigations indicate that two gullies, known today as the Wadi Rimah and the Wadi Batin trace the course of ancient rivers. Zarins believes that these are the remains of the Pishon River and that the Gihon is the modern day Karun emptying into the Gulf. This area along the Euphrates has yielded the ruins of many ancient cities, utensils, tools, jewelry and most importantly clay tablets containing pictures and written language that quite often parallels Biblical accounts and stories”*.

Archeological discoveries enable us to look back in time and give us some insight into the thoughts, life style and history of early mankind. At Jendet Nasr a pre-flood

city which was destroyed by fire in approximately 3500 BC and excavated in 1926, a pictorial inscription was found which indicates a Monotheism belief existed at that time. Monotheism is the belief in one God. Archaeological excavations in the 18th and 19th centuries of Biblical sites, located in what is now modern day Iraq, have unearthed clay tablets and stones dating back approximately 6,600 years. The ruins of Nineveh, an ancient Assyrian city mentioned in the Bible's Old Testament Book of 2nd Kings chapter 19 verse 36 were discovered in 1820 by Claude James Rich an agent for the East Indian Co. Paul Emil Botta a Frenchman at the Counsel in Mousl began excavating Nineveh's ruins in 1842 and by 1852 had laid bare the palace of Sargon at Khorsabad. Sargon 2nd is mentioned in the Bible's book of 2nd Kings Chapter 17 beginning at verse 4 and chapter 20 verse 12 as well as in the books of Ezra, Nehemiah and Isaiah.

At Nineveh 100,000 clay tablets were found, at Accad 60,000 clay tablets were found and at Ur a school classroom complete with 150 school exercise tablets, with mathematical, medical, historical texts and one large tablet in parallel columns with a complete conjugation of a Sumerian verb and its Semitic equivalent were found. Other Biblical excavations sites not previously mentioned are Kish and Fara. At Nineveh and Calah between 1845 and 1851 Sir Austen Henry Layard, an Englishman considered to be the father of Assyriology, discovered the

palace ruins of five Assyrian Kings who are named in the Bible and also the great library of Assur-banipal that was estimated to contain more than 100,000 volumes. The names of these five (5) Assyrian kings and where they are mentioned in the Bible's Old Testament are as follows; Tilgath Pileser 2nd in Chronicles chapter 28 verse 30, Shalmaneser in 2nd Kings chapter 17 verse 1, Sargon 11 in Isaiah chapter 20 verse 1, Sennaherib in 2nd Kings chapter 18 verse 13 and Esar-haddon in 2nd Kings chapter 19 verse 36.

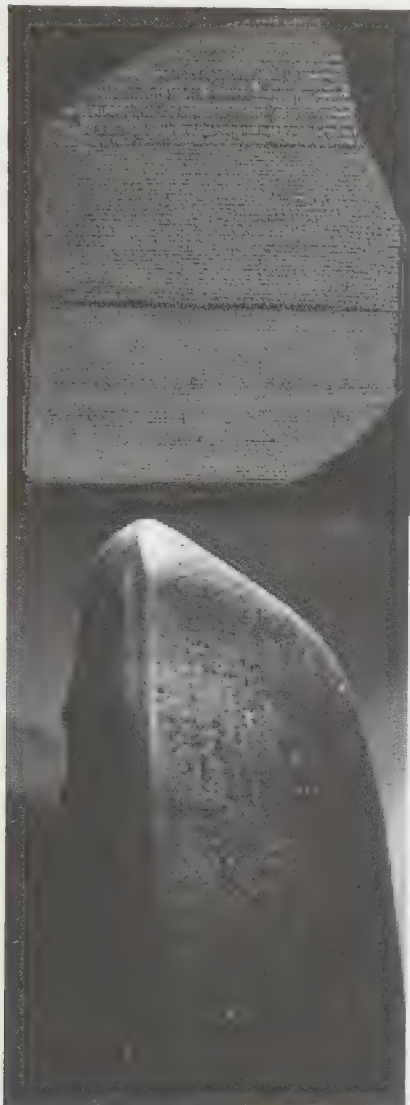
In all the ancient cities mentioned above, the excavations were found to contain great libraries and in some instances the pictographic closely parallel the contents of the first five books (The Pentateuch) of the Bible that authorship can be at least in part attributed to Moses most likely written on papyrus and/or leather scrolls probably between 1446 and 1406 BC.

To communicate other than verbal communication, mankind first used pictures on clay tablets or pictorial writing. Pictorial writing consisted of thousands of pictures and symbols. Gradually, over time, this was reduced to approximately 150 symbols and then to 39 symbols that became standard for peoples of different culture and varied backgrounds. Scholars reference these symbols as cuneiform writings. Cuneiform writing enabled citizens of many countries to communicate to each other in writing. Prior to the development of cuneiform the Assyrians

and Babylonians kept detailed accounts of everyday occurrences and historical events on clay tablets. These are of significant archeology importance. These clay tablets have survived for centuries buried in the rubble of the cities that the Assyrians and Babylonians lived in. Unlocking the inscriptions on both the Assyrian and Babylonian tablets gave to the world historical records of untold value. Prior to the discovery of these clay tablets and the unlocking of what was inscribed upon them, the only source of information we had on ancient Assyrian and Babylonian civilizations was the information contained within the Bible and many persons were skeptical as to the accuracy of the Bible information. In many instances we now find the clay tablet information to closely parallel what has been written in the Bible. Let us now turn our attention to what has been found at some other archaeological sites.

An archeological discovery that provided the key to the understanding of Egyptian hieroglyphs is the Rosetta stone. Issued in 196BC by King Ptolemy V of Memphis Egypt, upon this stone, is inscribed a decree in three different scripts. In the upper part of the stone the text is in ancient Egyptian hieroglyphs, the text in the middle is demotic script with the lower portion being in Greek. The text being almost identical in each of the three scripts it provided the key to locking Egyptian hieroglyphics.

Rosetta stone.



Hammurabi's stone.

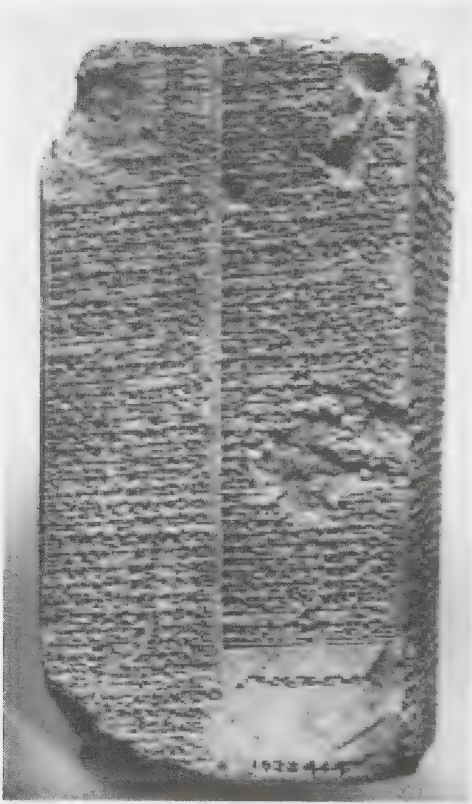
On Behistun Mountain located in modern day Iraq and approximately 200 miles

northeast of the ancient city of Babylon there is a very large rock outcropping. The face of this outcropping is covered with ancient carvings. Sir Henry Rawlinson, a British army officer between 1835 and 1839 studied the inscriptions and was able to unlock the key to the Babylonian language and gave to the world the vast treasures of Babylonian history. During the next fourteen years the inscriptions were completely translated. The carvings were engraved in 516BC by the order of king Darius of Persia who ruled from 521BC to 485BC. Darius is mentioned in the Biblical book of Ezra chapters 5 and 6 as the Persian king who rebuilt the Temple in Jerusalem. The following is a photograph of this outcropping.



According to the Bible's book of 1st Kings Chapter 16 beginning at verse 23 in 880BC King Omri, the king of the northern kingdom of Israel bought a hill from a man named Shemer. Upon this hill King Omri built the city of Samaria and made it his capital. The biblical account of this city continues at chapter 22 verse 39 where we are told that the palace was inlaid with ivory by Ahab Omri's son who had succeeded him. The fall of the city is recorded in 2 Kings Chapter 17 verse 5 and 6 and also in annals of Sargon, the Assyrian king who took the city in the winter of 722-721BC. Archaeological excavations were conducted at Samaria from 1908 to 1910 and also in 1931 through 1935. In addition to the palace being unearthed more than 500 fragments of ivory were found. These fragments were beautiful in design, were small boxes, toiletries and ivory inlaid wooden wall panels. This archeological find solidifies the biblical account of the city being inlaid with ivory.

Other archeological finds of extreme interest would be: The Weld Dynastic Prism dated prior to 2170 BC it gives a written list of the kings from the beginning of his race to his own time including 10 long reigning kings. Hammurabi's stone, dated about 2000 BC is a finely polished black stone, 8 feet high 2 feet wide and 1.5 feet thick containing 4000 lines in cuneiform writing of Semitic Babylonian language. It is a complete book.



A photograph of the Weld Dynasty Prism Stone.

Recent archeological discoveries that strongly suggest the accuracy and history of the Bible are Ezekiel's Tablets and the Dead Sea Scrolls.

Ezekiel was born in Jerusalem, a member of the priestly Zadok family whose father's name was Buzi. When he was about 25 years old he was deported along with thousand of others to Babylon by Nebuchadnezzar in 597BC. At approximately age 30 he

experienced a vision from God and became a prophet and a great teacher. When he died his remains were entombed in a grave between the rivers of Chebar and the Euphrates in what is now modern day Iraq. Buried with him were tablets upon which were chiseled the entire Biblical book of Ezekiel. Centuries ago Bedouins robbed his grave and removed the tablets. Eventually in 1940 most of the tablets were returned to Israel and are now housed in Jerusalem in the Ben Zvi Museum. With the exception of a few verses, chiseled upon the sixty six tablets housed there, is almost the complete Biblical book of Ezekiel. The text upon these tablets parallels the text of Ezekiel in the Bible.

At Qumran in 1947 the Dead Sea Scrolls were discovered. Among the many treasures discovered here was the complete Biblical book of Isaiah on a brass scroll. This scroll is now housed in the Museum of The Jars in Jerusalem. Its text also parallels that of the Biblical book of Isaiah.

One could offer volumes more on how writing developed and archeological findings however, I should now like to turn my attention back to curious statements and prophecies within the Bible.

Chapter Twelve: Angels: Biblical Prophecies and Statements of Interest:

The Bible is a book of verifiable historical events, persons and places are named also angelic functions are given. It contains more than 1093 prophecies. Here prophets are named along with what they prophesized. According to the Bible a prophecy is a direct revelation from God given to the prophet. I will examine these, but, first I will scrutinize the Biblical angels, the Biblical Enoch, a few Old Testament Biblical events, statements and prophecies not related to Jesus Christ, personal experiences and then examine historical events to determine if the event or the prophecy actually has happened (has come true or fulfilled) as prophesied.

Angels:

In the Christian Bible angels are mentioned at least one hundred and eighty four (184) times. They are mentioned at least one hundred and five (105) times in the Old Testament and at least seventy nine (79) times in the Bible's New Testament. Angels are heavenly beings that were created by God. In the Bible's last book "Revelations" chapter 5 verse 11 it's author John states that there are at least 100,000,000 (10,000 X 10,000) angels; a few are actually named. Like man, when God created angels He may have given them free will. However, taking direction

from God, angels have immense super-natural power including being able to change their form, disguising themselves in any shape and they appear to be of different hierarchy.

Classes of angels that we know about are: Seraphim, Cherubim, Thrones, Dominions, Virtues, Powers, Principals, Guardian and Arch Angels. In the Protestant Bible three Arch Angels are named: they are Michael, Raphael and Gabriel. Enoch who was seventh from Adam, in his writings not only gives us the names of four more Arch Angels: Uriel, Phanuel, Raquel and Sarakiel he also alludes to their responsibilities and refers to them as the Holy Angels of God. I must caution that Enoch's Arch Angel's names differ slightly from Pope St. Gregory and differ from Coptic Orthodoxy and others; however, I am not sure of their source of information regarding angels. In the book of Enoch in Chapters IX, XX, and XLI we are told; Uriel "*presides over clamor and terror*", Raphael "*blesses the elect One, and the elect who suffer on account of the Lord of Spirits*" "*presides over every suffer and every affliction of the sons of men*" "*presides over the spirits of men*", Raquel "*inflicts punishment on the world and the luminaries*" (I do not understand what luminaries refers to), "Michael "*is merciful and patient*" "*presides over human virtue, commands the nations*" "*Blesses the Lord of Spirits for ever and ever*". Sarakiel "*presides over the spirits of the children of men that transgress*", Gabriel "*who presides over all that is powerful*" "*who presides over Ikisat*" (Ikisat is unknown to us perhaps it is a common name), "*over*

paradise and over the Cherubim and Phanuel “presides over repentance, and the hope of those who will inherit eternal life”. Will Durant in his book “Caesar and Christ” on page 540 suggests that the book of Enoch as we now know it may have been written by several authors between 170 and 66BC. He then offers no further information.

In the Bible two other angels are named. Satan also referred to as Lucifer and who Christians call the “Devil”. John in Revelations chapter nine verse 11 refers to “the angel of the Abyss”. In Hebrew this angel’s name is Abaddon and is also called Apollyon in Greek.

In the Catholic Bible’s Old Testament book of Tobit there are two incidents involving angels that are worthy of mention. (1) Beginning at chapter 3 verse 16 and continuing on through the end of the book of Tobit there is an interesting account of God dispatching his angel Raphael to earth. Raphael, disguised as a man who calls himself Azariah, accompanies Tobiah’s return trip from Nineveh to Rages in Media. It is a story of honoring God, of trust and faith, of love and marriage, of healing, of casting out a demon and of rewards. It is well worth the read. (2) In chapter 12 verse 15 the angel Raphael is speaking and we hear him say “*I am Raphael, one of the seven angels who enter and serve before the Glory of the Lord*” This statement solidifies Enoch’s statements that there are at least seven arch angels.

According to Biblical scripture angels have played a prime roll in carrying out the events of some prophecies however, it is not my intent here to further examine their roll. The angelic involvement can be readily found by reading through the Bible.

The Biblical Enoch and the Book of Enoch:

Enoch the seventh from Adam (Adam according to the Bible was the first man created by God) is mentioned in the Bible's book of Genesis chapter five (5) verses eighteen (18) through twenty four (24). Enoch's genealogy is given and we are told that Enoch was a righteous man who walked with God and that God took him up to heaven. He did not experience death. This fact is also mentioned in the book of Sarich in the Roman Catholic Bible. Chapter 49 verse 14 we read "*Few upon the earth have been made the equal of Enoch, for he was taken up bodily*" implying Enoch did not experience death. Enoch is also mentioned in the Bible's New Testament books of Hebrews chapter eleven (11) verse five (5) and Jude chapter one (1) verses fourteen (14) and fifteen (15).

In 1773 the Scottish explorer James Bruce discovered in an Ethiopian monastery three copies of the Book of Enoch the Prophet. In 1821-1823 Richard Laurence translated the book into English. When one reads through this English version one finds that Enoch was tutored by his God's Angels, teaching him among other things about Heaven, Hell,

Angels, the creation, the seasons of the earth, **the movement of the sun**, the seasons of the sun and moon, to understand writing and what herbs should be used for medicinal purposes. In the book of Enoch chapter thirty three (33) verse one (1), we read that Enoch travelled north to the extremities (top) of the earth; in chapter seventy one (71) verse six (6) we read that the sun is a flaming fire, in chapters seventy seven (77) and chapters seventy eight (78) Enoch traces the movements of the sun and the moon and in chapter seventy seven (77) verse twelve (12) we are told that the moon's light is poured into it from the sun. Enoch's Biblical genealogy places him as having lived some 7,000 years ago. How could he have known the earth was round, that our sun is a flaming fireball, that we are moving through space and that the moon's light is sunlight reflecting off of it? We now understand the sun rotates counter clockwise on its axis. Being a massive sphere of gas its poles rotate at a different speed than its center region. Scientists have calculated the sun's polar regions to make one complete rotation approximately every 24 days. The equatorial region makes one complete rotation in approximately 30 days and it takes approximately 226 million years to complete one elliptical orbit. How could Enoch have known the movements and the seasons of the sun? The answer seems to come from Enoch himself. He claims throughout the book bearing his name that God's angels taught him.

What this writer found so unusual and puzzling when pouring over the Book of Enoch was that in numerous places Enoch states that a year is exactly 364 days long. Was he mistaken; or has some astronomical event happened that our year is now 365 $\frac{1}{4}$ days long? Could it be that this event was the day the sun stood still in answer to Joshua's prayer at Gibeon? Please read Joshua chapter 10 verses 12-15 and my comments regarding Hitchens, Hawkins and Mlodinow in Chapter Sixteen.

In the Bible's Old Testament Book of Psalms 19 verses 4-7 there is an account of the sun and of its immense heat.

In the Catholic Bible the Book of Wisdom, Chapter 8 verses 17 through and including verse 22 the writer informs us that Wisdom (God) taught him, giving him sound knowledge of hidden things. A partial list follows: the organization of the universe and its forces, the beginning end and midpoint of times, **changes in the sun's course**, the variations of seasons, the cycles of years and the position of the stars. Theologians and Historians place the composition of this book before the 5th century BC. How could this writer have this knowledge? Could he have fabricated this as a story and why would he have done it? By the writer's own admission his God told him these things.

The Movement of Heavenly Bodies:

In Psalms 103 verse 12 we read **“as far as east is from the west”**. This statement seems to suggest that the Psalmist understood the earth is round and one can circumvent the earth travelling east and never travel in a westerly direction. This also holds true if one circumvents the earth travelling west you are always moving in a westerly direction. The Psalms of the Bible were composed over a period of time probably encompassing centuries cumulating in the third century BC.

The prophet Isaiah lived until at least 681 BC. In the Bible’s book of Isaiah that bears his name we read the following statement in chapter 40 verse 22 when Isaiah is writing about his God **“it is He that sitteth upon the circle of the earth”** The writers of the NIV version of the Bible translate this verse as **“He sits enthroned above the circle of the earth”**

We are unable to pinpoint exactly when the Prophet Job lived. Recent archeology discoveries date him as having lived between 2000-1000 BC. In the Bible’s Book of Job that he is credited with having written part of , we read in chapter 26 verse 7 when Job is writing about his God the following statement: **“He spreads out the Northern skies over empty space; He suspends the earth over nothing”**. How could the Psalmist, the prophet Isaiah and the prophet Job have known that the earth was round?

How did Job know that the earth is just hanging out there in space? Job by his own admission tells us in the above biblical verse that his God told him.

William Herschel (1738-1822) a musician and astronomer developed telescopes that he used to scan our heavens. He is noted for discovering more than one thousand planets, their moons, stars and comets. In 1781 he discovered Uranus and its two moons Tatiana and Oberon. In 1800 he discovered infrared rays. Later on in his life he discovered the moons of Saturn, Mimas and Enceladus. Perhaps his greatest astronomical discovery was that the galaxies are moving and that our sun moves. In 1783 he calculated the sun's speed to be 12.2 miles per second or 43,920 miles per hour (www.WilliamHerschel). If this is truth, then we travel through space 1,054,080 miles each day or 384,739,920 miles per year and this has been happening year after year for perhaps billions of years. This writer ponders from whence we came and to where we might be going.

Do these preceding statements prove the existence of a God? Probably not, they do however tell us that Enoch who lived more than seven thousand (7,000) years ago and the Psalmist understood that the sun was a flaming fireball and the moon's light was caused by the sun's light reflecting off it and that the earth's shape was round. The writers of the Psalms, Job and Isaiah also understood that the earth was round. Did we not (or at

least some of us) still believe in the 15th century AD that the earth was flat when Columbus set sail to prove, once and for all that the earth was not flat. Did we not believe in Galileo' time that the earth was immovable and held up by a giant named Atlas (I wonder if anyone ever pondered what Atlas was standing on when he was holding the earth up).

How frightened we must have been when we first realized that we are just hanging out in space.

The Earth will be destroyed by fire:

Matthew in chapter 10:15 and chapter 11 verses 23&24 writes that Jesus hinted that eventually the earth would be destroyed by fire. The author of Deuteronomy 32:22, and 2nd Peter 3:5-13 and Luke 17:29-30 also record the earth will eventually be destroyed by fire. We now know that when our sun dies and explodes our earth will not survive it will be burnt up. Is this what Jesus was referring to? I do not honestly know. My gut feeling is that the end of the earth as we know it will come much sooner then when our sun eventually dies.

Chapter Thirteen: Old Testament History:

“The Jew has made a marvelous fight in this world, in all the ages; and he has done it with hands tied behind him. The Egyptian, the Babylonian and the Persian arose, filled the planet with sound and splendor, then faded to dream stuff and passed away. The Greek and the Roman followed a vast noise, and they are gone; other peoples have sprung up and held their torch light for a time, but it has burned out, and they sit in twilight now, or have vanished. The Jew saw them all, beat them all, and now is what he always was, exhibiting no decadence, no infirmities of age, no weakening of his parts, no slowing of his energies, no dulling of his alert and aggressive mind” MARK TWAIN.

The Birth of Israel and Judaism:

The ruins of the ancient Mesopotamian city of Ur first mentioned in the Bible’s book of Genesis chapter 11 verse 28 were not discovered until the mid 1850’s. This was the birth place of Abram who later became known as Abraham and was the father of the Israeli nation. Let’s fast forward in this story to Genesis chapter 12 through and including Genesis chapter 25. Here we read that a man named Abram left Ur and settled in Haran. It was here that he was called by God to take his family and leave Haran in what is modern day Iraq and relocate in Canaan, what is now

modern day Israel. God approaches Abram, changes his name to Abraham and makes a covenant with him, thus the Hebrew language is formed and what is to eventually become the Israeli nation is born.

The Biblical account is most unusual as God approaches Abram, Abram does not seek out God. From this one can only conclude that Abram or Abraham and all of his descendents are God's chosen peoples. God tells Abraham that if he abandons his past and follows God's way, God will richly bless him and eventually give to his descendents all of the land now occupied by the Canaanites. For Abraham to abandon his past and accept monotheism must have been most difficult, as the population of Ur at that time was mainly Semitic. Their religious culture consisted of many Gods. (The fore going was extrapolated from: A History of the Ancient World Chester G. Starr page 80).

Meanwhile the Bible story continues on, in the Biblical account Abraham chooses to follow God and relocates his family amongst the Canaanites. God called to Abraham and suggested to him that if he would leave Haran and settle in Canaan and obey His (God's) commandments he would be truly blessed with children and their numbers could not be counted. Abraham and his wife Sarai were old and had not been able to have children. At this time Abraham was 75 years old. Genesis chapter 13 beginning at verse 14 we are told that God told Abraham who was living in his

tent near Sodom in Canaan to go out side and **“to look in all directions and the land that his eyes beheld would be his and his children’s land forever and ever”**. The land that Abraham looked upon is what we now know as Israel (Genesis 13:15-17). Here God tells Abraham that if he obeyed Him he would give him off spring so numerous that they would be like the dust of the earth that no one would be able to count them and then in (Genesis 15:5) God took Abraham outside and said **“look up into the sky and count the stars if indeed you can count them. Then He said to him so shall your off spring be”**. Soon after this visitation of God to Abraham who was then ninety nine years old, his son Isaac was born (Genesis chapter 21) to Sarah (God had changed Sarai’s name to Sarah). Today we understand that the hundreds of thousand of stars that we see in our sky are only the stars in our own galaxy, the Milky Way that some estimates place the number of stars in it to be as high as 400 billion. The development of the telescope has enabled us to explore other distant galaxies that also contain billions upon billions of stars. The Israel Central Bureau of Statistics places the number of Jews in Israel in 2010 at 5,776,500 additionally there are Jews living in almost every country on earth. The World Jewish Population Survey of 2010 places the number of Jewish people living on earth to be 13,421,000. We know that at least 6,000,000 Jews lost their lives during the Holocaust of the Second World War. Abraham lived about 3,500 years ago so truly it would be

impossible to count all of his descendents when one considers and adds to those presently alive, all the Jewish people who may have been born, lived and then died over the last 3,500 years.

A great and prolonged drought occurs in this part of the world (Canaan) and Abraham goes down to Egypt for a short period of time, Genesis chapter 12. Many years later Abraham's descendents, beginning with Joseph who is sold by his brothers as a slave, is taken to Egypt (Genesis chapter 37). Then beginning in Genesis chapter 42 through Exodus chapter 5 we are told that Joseph's brothers also go down into Egypt. They prosper, and multiply so that after 400 years they fall out of favor with the Pharaoh and become slaves. God intervenes and brings numerous plagues upon the Egyptians (Exodus chapter 6 through chapter 15) that the Pharaoh finally lets the Jewish people leave Egypt. After fleeing Egypt and wandering in the desert for forty years (the last chapters of Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers and Deuteronomy) God finally lets them enter the Promised Land. They, under the leadership of Joshua and with God's intervention, cross the Jordan River and take the city of Jericho. City after city falls to Joshua and his men until they have taken 32 cities and now occupy all of the former Canaanite land (Joshua chapter 1 through chapter 13). This is the land God promised to Abraham many centuries before. Unfortunately we only have the Biblical

version of these events; and therefore cannot be historically verified, however archeologists have found the remains of most if not all the 32 cities that are mentioned in the Bible that fell to Joshua. Today some have been rebuilt while others remain in ruins and are under various stages of excavation. The above Biblical accounts of God's visitations and historical events surrounding Abraham would seem to suggest the existence of a super natural being that Christians refer to as God.

Melchizedek: Who is Melchizedek?

Melchizedek is first mentioned in Genesis Chapter 14 verse 18-20 as the King of Salem who administered bread and wine to Abram and then blessed him. The meal and blessing were administered after Abram had returned to camp and after rescuing his nephew Lot who was taken captive by a consortium of five invading kings. Melchizedek is also mentioned in The Bible's Old Testament books of: Psalms 110 verse 4, Zechariah chapter 6, verse 13, 2nd Samuel chapter 7 verse 16, Isaiah chapter 9 verse 7. In the Bible's New Testament books Luke chapter 1 verse 32, John chapter 12, verse 34 and almost all of the seventh chapter of the book of Hebrews is devoted to him. Here we are told he was "A priest of God", "Most high". "Did not have a father or mother, without genealogy, without beginning of days or end of life, like the Son of God he remains a priest forever".

Various places within the Bible we are told that God created the angels and also Adam and Eve the first two humans. Being created, angels and also Adam and Eve would not have birth parents. We are also told, excluding the fallen angels, that they will live forever, they have certain duties none of which includes being a high priest and of course Adam and Eve died. The Bible also teaches us that Jesus is the only son of God. Melchizedek's description seems to be that of Jesus. Could it be that many thousands of years before being born to Mary, Jesus fed Abram wine and bread?

Pithom and Ramses:

In the Bible's book of Genesis chapter forty seven (47) verse eleven (11) we are given the story of Joseph and other Hebrew families settling in Egypt and in Exodus chapter one (1) verse eleven (11) we are told that they settled and built two cities, Pithom and Ramses. Professor Sachar in his "A History of the Jews" 5th edition page 15 tells us that in 1883 the sites of both Pithom and Ramses were discovered and amongst the ruins, bricks bearing the pharaoh's name "Ramses" were discovered and at Abu Simbel at the temple rock there are four giant statues of "Ramses, (ruled 1290-1224BC) upon the base of each are images of captives in bondage. The images were originally identified as being Hebrew captives. This artifact led some scholars to believe that they, the Hebrews were in bondage in Egypt at this

time. This would then contradict the Biblical time frame of when the Hebrew's were in Egypt. According to the Bible the Hebrew were in Egypt for an extended period of time with the exodus taking place in about the year 1446BC and entering the Promised Land in 1406BC. More recent artifacts have shown that the images on the four giant statues of Ramses are portraying Hittite and Syrian captives and that the biblical account of the Hebrew exodus from Egypt would then be accurate.

Chester G. Starr in his book "A History of the Ancient World" pages 95 through and including 110 traces the history of the Hittites and Syria. Here we are told that in 1906 excavations at a ridge near Boghazkoy in modern day Turkey revealed what was a Hittite city. Here more than 10,000 tablets in cuneiform writing were discovered. From these we have learned that starting with the Hittite king Suppiluliumas (c. 1375-35) the Hittites controlled the upper fertile Nile river valley and made a buffer against Assyria. The Egyptians under Seti 1 and then Ramesses 11 fought back. Ramesses by his own account made repeated invasions into Syria and secured a great victory over the Hittites at Kadesh. Eventually in 1280BC a treaty of nonaggression and alliance was made between the Hittites and the Egyptians. Copies of this document have been found in both Egypt and the Hittite capital of Hattusas. From the above one can conclude that the images on the four giant statues of Ramesses

are Hittite and Syrian and the Biblical time line of when the Hebrew were in Egypt would be approximately from 1,775 to 1,446. The Biblical account is as follows.

Historically we know that the Israel King Solomon reigned from 962 to 931BC. In first Kings Chapter 6 verse 1, we are told that the 4th year of Solomon' reign corresponds to the 480 year after the exodus. If so the Hebrew exodus from Egypt would have taken place during the year 1438BC. ($962-4+480=1438$). Additionally the persons who composed the book "The Timechart of Biblical History" in constructing the genealogy of persons mentioned in the Bible place Jacob as having gone down into Egypt in 1751BC with the exodus taking place in 1491BC. They place the birth of Moses about 1571BC and dying 1451BC and Joshua entering Canaan in 1451BC. When working that far back in history to have a variance of only 53 years when the Exodus may have taken place is quite remarkable. The Biblical story tells us that when Jacob went down into Egypt the Pharaoh was friendly however; succeeding Pharaohs forced slave labor upon them. Moshe Pearlman in his book "In the footsteps of Moses" suggests that the friendly Pharaoh may have been when the Hykos regime conquered and ruled Egypt for about 150 years beginning around 1700BC. If so this strongly supports the Biblical account of when the Hebrew were in Egypt and when the exodus took place. There is another clue in the Bible as to when the Jews were in Egypt

and when the exodus may have occurred. It is found in the Biblical book of Judges.

In the Bible's book of Judges we are told that **“in those days there was no king in Israel”** Judges 17 verse 6. This statement is repeated again in chapter 18:1, chapter 19:1 and chapter 21:25. Historically we know that Saul the first Israeli King was born in 1080BC. We also know his father who was a Benjamite was Kish and his grandfather's name was Adiel. Saul became King in 1050BC and ruled until 1025 BC. These are important dates to remember because in Judges Chapter 11 verse 26 we read the account of the Israelis already occupying Hesbon, Aroer and the surrounding settlements for three hundred (300) years. These statements from Judges and the fact that Saul became King in 1050BC place the date of Joshua's conquest of Jericho and the rest of the Canaanite cities prior to 1350BC (1050 + 300 =1350BC). The only unknown is how many years past after Joshua crossed the Jordan and took Jericho until they had camped at Hesbon and Aroer. One can assume that a considerable number of years may have passed because if the Hebrew nation was waging war against the Canaanites they most likely would not have been camped at any one place but would have been moving forward as the conquest progressed.

The first city taken by the Hebrews under the leadership of Joshua was Jericho. This site was excavated by John Garstang in 1930-

1936. Kathleen Kenyon also excavated this site in 1952-1958. Garstang based on the artifacts he found determined that Jericho fell around 1400BC. Kenyon based on the artifacts she found and the strata of the walls concluded that Jericho had been taken and destroyed in 1550-1500BC and again in 1200BC. Many theologians and historians accepted her findings and discounted those of Garstang. Kenyon's findings were accepted until very recently. Bryant G. Wood; Phd; examined both Garstang's and Kenyon's work and presented a technical paper May 1, 2008. In it he concludes that Garstang correctly dated when Jericho fell and that Kenyon excavating a different area of the ruins of Jericho was also correct that Jericho again fell in 1200BC. It is not my intent here to debate Wood's entire paper however a few comments are warranted.

Both Garstang and Kenyon found full jars of stored grain. This would indicate that Jericho fell very quickly and was not under siege for a long period of time. Garstang found Cypriot bichrome ware dating before 1400BC. Garstang found scarab (seals) of Tuthmose III who reigned 1504-1450, scarab of Hatshepsut who reigned 1503-1483 and scarab of Amenhotep III who reigned 1386-1349. This fact also strongly suggests a date earlier than 1200BC when Jericho fell to Joshua and the Hebrew army. Improved radiocarbon dating and Garstang's stratigraphical consideration also support a date of around 1400BC when Jericho fell.

Unfortunately Garstang passed away in 1956 and Kenyon in 1978 so neither one can now defend them selves.

Joshua genealogy from the Bible is as follows: he was Hoshe'a the son of Nun who Moses renamed Joshua (Yehoshu'a) Numbers chapter 13 verse 16. Joshua chapter 24 verse 29 states that Joshua was 110 years old when he died. Biblical chronology places his birth in 1500BC and his death in 1390BC at least 110 years before Jericho was taken again in 1200BC.

Does this suggest the existence of God? Again probably not however, it does support the Biblical account of the Hebrews living in Egypt and building the above mentioned Egyptian cities and the events alluded to above place the Israelis exodus from Egypt and their conquest of Canaan at a much earlier date of 1200BC as suggested by some.

The Adam and Eve seal and the Temptation Seal:

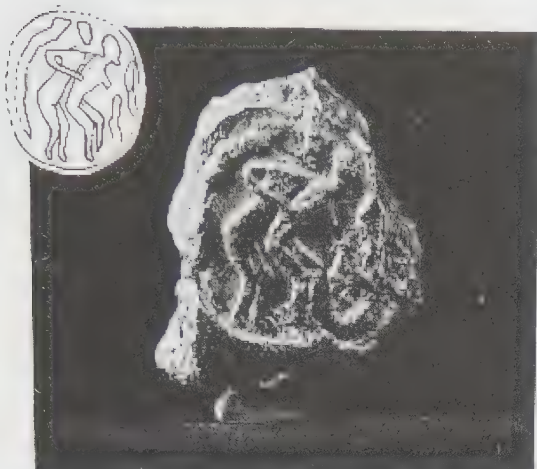
In the first book of the Bible Genesis chapter 2 verse four to chapter 3 verse 24 we read the story of the creation of the first man and woman Adam and his wife Eve. God placed them in the Garden of Eden. An angel Lucifer who was jealous attempted to achieve the same power as Jesus and for that reason fell from God's favor. Lucifer is known to Christians as Satan, the evil one and the devil. Satan disguised as a serpent successfully

persuaded Eve to eat the fruit of a forbidden tree. Eve then convinced her husband Adam to also eat of this tree's fruit. Having done this they fell from God's favor and he banished them from the Garden of Eden and they were condemned to eventually die. There are two clay tablet seals that were found in ancient Babylonian ruins that appear to tell the Biblical story of Adam and Eve. They are (1) The Temptation Seal found at Akkad and now housed in the British Museum. On this tablet, in the center is a tree, on the right is a man, and on the left is a woman seemingly to be plucking fruit from a tree. Immediately behind the woman is a snake standing erect and appears to be whispering to her:



(2) The Adam and Eve seal was found in 1932 by Dr. E. A. Speiser near the bottom of the Tepe Gawra mound that is located approximately 12 miles north of the ancient Babylonian city of Nineveh. The seal is dated to approximately 3500 BC. On this clay tablet there is a naked man and woman walking bent over as if totally down cast and broken hearted. Slithering along behind them is a

snake. This tablet is presently in the University museum in Philadelphia.



Archeological Evidence of a Great Flood:

In the Christian Bible Genesis chapter 6 verse 1 to chapter 8 verse 19 we read the account of how mankind because of their sins had fallen from God's favor. Noah and his family were the only righteous persons and God-fearing family on the earth and so God decided that he would destroy mankind and almost all living things except for Noah and his family, some birds and animals that Noah was to take on board the Ark with him. According to the account in Genesis, God instructed Noah to build an Ark; the Ark being a large boat. The instruction given included the size, how it was to be built, what provision were to be taken aboard and also that Noah was to take on board two of each

living species, one male and one female. That being done God sealed the door of the Ark and then caused it to rain for forty days and forty nights. The deluge flooded the earth. The Ark and its occupants floated on the water and after the rains ceased and the water receded the Ark came to rest on Mount Ararat. Ararat is plural and refers to a mountain range located in modern day Turkey. To my knowledge neither the Ark nor any fragment of the Ark has ever been discovered. However, diggings in the ruins of ancient cities in the Euphrates river valley prove beyond a doubt that a great flood had occurred in approximately 2,400BC.

Archeological diggings in the Euphrates valley, in the mounds of ancient cities that were once located there have determined that, in some cases there could be as many as 18 or 20 cities that had been destroyed and then a new city built on top of the ruins. Buildings and perimeter walls were generally made of mud bricks. The rubble of these when destroyed by the ravages of war, were usually just leveled forming a very good base for a new building. Thus a new city would be built upon the ruins of the previous city. Some of the ruins are nearly 100 feet deep.

Archeological diggings in these mounds have been completed to their bottom and then beyond. At the site of the ancient city of Ur Dr. C. L. Wooley's (www.c.l.wooley/Ur) joint expedition from the University of Pennsylvania and the British Museum found, while excavating below the rubble, clean clay

sediment to be 8 feet thick. Below it was another layer of rubble extended downward. Dr. Stephen Langdon (www.stephanlangdon/Kish) of the Field Museum Oxford University digging at Kish in 1928 and 1929 found the clean clay sediment to be 5 feet thick and then again rubble below it. Dr. Eric Schmidt, University of Pennsylvania digging at Fara (www.fara/eric Schmidt) in 1931 found the clay sediment here to be comparable to that at Kish. At various depths beneath all the ruin mounds mentioned above there was a clean clay/silt sediment level between 5 and 8 feet deep. This would seem to indicate a great flood had occurred approximately 2,400BC. In the strata immediately below this clay/silt sediment artifacts were found from an advanced civilization.

The pottery, pictorial and written clay tablets, implements, weapons and fragments of clay building bricks found above the flood level can be dated back to around 2,400-2500 BC. The artifacts found below the flood level are distinctively different than those found above the flood level and are dated earlier than 3,500BC.

Do the Temptation seal, the Adam and Eve seal and the fact that a great flood happened approximately 3,500 years ago prove conclusively that God exists? Probably not, it does however strongly suggest parallels to these stories found in the Christian Bible and that man lived in this area as early as

3,500BC and that they had developed the written language, had metal weapons, had domesticated animals, invented the wheel for the chariots, had pottery and were able to make bricks for building.

Chapter Fourteen: Ancient World Powers:

Abram Leon Sachar Ph.D. President of Brandeis University and founder of many other Jewish universities in his book "A History of the Jews" trace's Jewish history from the fourth millennium BC to modern times. Sachar has included along with the Jewish history all world powers, when they came to power, their kings and then when they declined and ceased to be a world power. It is this writer's opinion that his work is most commendable. William F. Albright (May 24, 1891-September 19, 1971) a Biblical archaeologist, writer of at least 5 books and universally acknowledged founder of the Biblical archaeology movement and Edwin R. Thiele (1895-1986) archaeologist, writer and best known for his chronological studies of the Hebrew kingdom periods have historically dated many Biblical events. Max L. Dimont in his book "Jews, God and History" traces the life and times of the Jewish people over the last four thousand (4,000) years. Mr. Dimont in this book points out that the Jews had been conquered and then exiled from almost every country on our planet. Chester G. Starr: Professor of Ancient History, University of Illinois, in his "A History of the Ancient World" New York Oxford University Press and also J. M. Roberts: "The History of the World": Penguin Books provide us with in-depth summary of world history. Both Mr. Roberts and Professor Starr reference hundreds of other historians. Professor Starr's

work is a clear perspective of the whole sweep of ancient times and from his work we can conclude that in the near East the Semitics was the first world force, a force not really a true world power. Assyria from 900-607BC was really the first world power followed by the Babylonians 606-536BC. The Babylonian period was followed by the Persian period 547 to 330 BCE. The Grecian period followed. The Romans then ruled the world beginning with Emperor Augustus in 31 BCE (Outlines of Roman History William C. Morey, Ph.D., D.C.L. New York, Cincinnati, Chicago: American Book Company 1901) and ended in 180 AD. This Roman world dominance included Israel at the time of Christ. It is not my purpose here to trace all of the historical events that may have happened during these eras nor is it my intent to offer insight into the fall and rise of each nation, Professors Sachar, Starr and Mr. Roberts have done an excellent job of putting that information forward. It is however important to note the period of time that each of the above world powers existed to be able to correlate them back to the prophecies recorded in the Hebrew writings in the Bible. I have relied very heavily upon the work of Professor Sachar and also upon the work of those who are also mentioned above.

The writers of the Bible have recorded when the rise to power and fall of succeeding world powers took place. The Prophets, sometimes hundreds of years prior to, prophesied the event and then succeeding

writers recorded the events as they unfolded. However, before examining the rise and fall of nations one should have an understanding of what traits a true prophet has.

True Prophets:

Prophecies of the prophets are scattered throughout the Bible, here within its pages at least 42 prophets are mentioned by name. In succeeding pages we will examine what some of the Bible's prophets have to say. But first, how does one determine a true prophet? Again scattered throughout the pages of the Bible there are statements to help us determine who may or may not be a true prophet from God. The following is a sampling of these statements. In Deuteronomy chapter 18:9-12 we are told that a true prophet: (1) *Does not immolate his or her son or daughter.* (2) *Does not consult a fortune teller, soothsayer, charmer, diviner or caster of spells.* (3) *Does not consult with ghost or spirits or seeks oracles from the dead.* Isaiah 58:1: *A prophet points out sins and transgressions of the people of God.* Isaiah 24:20-21 & Revelations 14:6-7 *Warns of coming judgment.* Jeremiah 28:9: *Their predictions will be fulfilled.* 2 Peter 1:21: *Prophesies in the name of the Lord.* 2 Peter 1:20: *Does not give their own interpretations of the prophecy.* Matthew 7:16-20: *They are recognized by the results of their works.* 1 Corinthians 14:3-4: *Edifies the church counsels and advises in religious matters.* 1 John 4:1-3: *Recognizes the incarnation of*

Jesus Christ. Anyone making a prediction who does not meet the above criteria is to be considered a false prophet. The issue of false prophets was addressed in Section One; Chapter Seven, Jesus prophecies of False Prophets/ Persons claiming to be the Messiah.

I should now like to trace the rise and fall of various nations beginning with the Hebrews under the leadership of Joshua and with God's guidance, crossing the Jordan River, conquering city after city thus establishing the Israeli nation.

The fall of Jericho:

From the Bible's book of Joshua we learn that after Moses' death (most likely in 1406BC) Joshua is appointed leader of God's chosen people. Joshua, whose name means "The Lord Saves", was a military leader under Moses. God appoints him to lead the people into the Promised Land. The fall of Jericho begins at Chapter 6 verse 1 in the book of Joshua. At the appointed time Joshua and his army cross the Jordan River and lay siege to Jericho. The city was well fortified and no one could get in. In Joshua chapter 6 **the Biblical story continues with The Lord telling Joshua that He will deliver Jericho into his hands.** He is instructed to have his entire army march around the city once a day for six days. Additionally seven priests carrying trumpets of ram horns in front of the Ark are to join in the march. The ark being the Ark of the Covenant, stored inside the Ark

were Aaron's staff, the two tablets upon which the Ten Commandments were written and a jar of manna.. Manna was the food from heaven that God gave to the Israelites while they were in the desert. A description of what the Ark looked like and from what it was made can be found in Exodus chapter 25 beginning at verse 10. On the seventh day they are to march around the city seven times with the priests blowing the trumpets. At an appointed time the priests were to give a long blast on the trumpets that was the signal for all the people to give a loud shout. When this was accomplished the walls of Jericho tumbled down and Joshua's army took the city. How could this be that marching around them, the blowing of rams horns and people shouting bring down fortified city walls? Perhaps one possible explanation can be offered if we examine where Jericho was located. An earthquake could have occurred at that exact moment. And again I caution that not having any historical or scientific data to substantiate it, it is only a possible explanation.



The mound is the ancient ruins of Jericho

Jericho, Caesarea Philippi and Bet She'an are named in the Bible and each has had significant Biblical events happen there. All are located in the Dead Sea Jordan Valley Fault. The following quotations describe this area: *"The dead Sea Jordan Valley fault is located within the Dead Sea Rift which is a transform type plate boundary separating the Arabian and Sinai plates while connecting the spreading zone of the Red Sea in the south to the Taurus collision zone in the north. The Dead Sea transform is a left shear, which started in the Miocene, with an accumulative lateral displacement of 105 kms. The DSB with all its sub basins is about 150 kms long and 20 kms wide"* (Quennell, 1958; Freund et al., 1970 Garfunkel 1951). *The Dead Sea*

Basin (DSB) is assumed to be one of the largest and deepest pull apart basins in the world and considered a classic example for such structure (Aydin and Mur, 1982; Allen and Allen 1990).

I have visited all three of the above mentioned sites.

Caesarea Philippi:

Caesarea Philippi founded approximately 300BC is the place where Jesus told Peter that he was to be the leader of the church. This event is known as the “Great Commission” and can be found by reading Matthew chapter 16 beginning at verse 13. At Caesarea Philippi a spring flows from the rocks and is one of the sources of the head waters of the Jordan. Like the lost city of Petra, but on a somewhat smaller scale, some of its buildings were carved out of and incorporated into the stone of the face of the cliff. Many temples dedicated to Gods were constructed there; perhaps the most famous of all was the temple of the God Pan. Today it lies in ruins. It was destroyed by an earthquake in 363AD and has never been rebuilt.



The ruins of Caesarea Philippi:

Bet She'an

A much older settlement was already a thriving community by 1079BC. Its Biblical name at that time was Beth Shan and it was here that the Philistines after defeating his army on Mount Gilboa, hung the head of King Saul upon the wall of the temple and his body on the wall of the city. The Philistines most likely hung the naked body of King Saul on the city wall at Bet She'an. In those days it was considered a terrible embarrassment for royalty to have any part of their private parts seen by the general public. Even when on the battle field the King would seek confinement when he found it necessary to relieve himself. Saul, the first Israeli King, was wounded during this battle and rather than be taken

prisoner committed suicide. This Biblical account can be found in 1 Samuel chapter 31 beginning at verse 1. Bet She'an was destroyed by earthquakes and rebuilt at the same site in 363AD, in 409AD, in 749AD and in 1917 was destroyed but not rebuilt. Today it also lies in ruins. (When visited one can grasp how beautiful this city once was).



Photograph of bet She'an in May of 2008

Jericho's ancient ruins lie just on the southwestern edge of modern day Jericho and most of the ruins are the original city's ruins. This is an important point. Most cities that were destroyed were usually rebuilt upon the ruins of the city destroyed. Consider the number of times Bet She'an was rebuilt.

Archeological excavations at Megiddo, another ancient site I visited, indicate this city was rebuilt, on the same site more than 20 times. In the Euphrates Valley this also holds true for the ancient Babylonian and Assyrian cities. According to the Biblical account Joshua, after destroying Jericho (Joshua 6:26), pronounced a curse against anyone who tried to rebuild Jericho. The curse was “The first born son would die after the foundations were laid and a 2nd son would die after the gates were built”. Again, according to the Bible this prophecy/curse came true when Hiel of Bethel tried to rebuild Jericho. His first son Abriam died after the foundations were laid and his youngest son Segub died when the gates were set up. (1st Kings 16:34).

Jericho’s ruins, according to carbon dating of artifacts found there, are perhaps 13-15 thousand years old and are just now being excavated. One possible explanation for the walls falling down, and this writer is not trying to second guess God, would be that the city being in the Dead Sea Jordan Valley Fault may have experienced an earthquake at that very moment that the Jewish people shouted. Could Joshua have known an earthquake was about to happen? Probably not, unless, his God informed him that an earthquake was about to take place as the Biblical account is that Joshua was only following his God’s instructions. Man cannot accurately predict when an earthquake may happen however, a God capable of creating

the universe and everything in it certainly could.

The fall of Israel and Jewish Diaspora:

Approximately 200 years after crossing the Jordan and beginning their conquest, in about 1200BC the Hebrew people after capturing the Promised Land split into two kingdoms, the north and the south, the north was known as Israel and the south as Judah. At this time the people in the northern kingdom became known as Israel and the people in the south as Jews. In the Bible's Old Testament books of Deuteronomy, Leviticus, Micah, Jeremiah, 1st Kings, 2nd Kings, Ezekiel, Daniel, Hosea Joel and Amos we read the account of how the Israeli people began to worship idols, worship pagan gods, used temple prostitutes, practiced homosexuality, intermarried with the pagans that they lived amongst, practiced child sacrifices and many other things. God disapproved of all of these. Scattered throughout the pages of these Biblical books are warnings from God of his pending anger and what will happen to the Israeli people if they do not heed the warnings from his prophets. Deuteronomy and Leviticus are attributed to Moses. Micah prophesied between 750 and 686BC Amos' prophecies most likely occurred during his ministry between 760-750BC, while Jeremiah and 1st and 2nd Kings were most likely composed about 626BC and Ezekiel can be dated to around 597BC. God's warnings given through

his prophets carried on for almost 500 years before he allowed Assyria to conquer Israel.

The Prophet Amos in the Biblical book that bears his names reiterates most if not all of the prophecies against the Israelis and for that reason we will address them and only comment on a few of the others. In chapter 26 verse 33 of Leviticus, the Bible's Old Testament's third book, we read God's prophecy to the Israeli people and of his impending punishment if they continued to disobey him. It reads as follows: **"I will scatter you among nations and I will draw out my sword and pursue you. Your land will be laid waste and your cities lie in ruins."** There are similar warnings in Deuteronomy chapter 4 verses 27, Deuteronomy chapter 28 verses 64-67, Jeremiah chapter 9 verse 16, Jeremiah chapter 30 verse 11, Jeremiah chapter 31 verse 10 and 1st Kings chapter 14 verse 15 to name a few. What is so unusual about the prophecies in Deuteronomy and Leviticus is that at the time the Israelis were wandering in the Sinai wilderness, they did not have land, houses, nor did they live in cities, they lived in tents. Later in Deuteronomy chapter 30 verse 3; **God tells his people that even though he has scattered them he has not forgotten them and at some future date he will gather them back to Israel.** There are similar promises from God to his people that he will gather them back unto himself in the Promised Land (Israel) in Micah chapter 2 verses 12 and 13, Jeremiah chapter 30 verse

3, Jeremiah chapter 31 verse 10, and many times in the book of Ezekiel beginning with chapter 11 verse 17 and Amos 9 beginning at verse 11.

Tekoa was a small town approximately 6 miles south of Bethlehem and approximately 11 miles from Jerusalem. It was here that Amos, a sheep herder and one who also worked in sycamore groves (Amos chapter 1 verse 1 and chapter 7 verses 14 and 15), was born. We are not given his genealogy or the date of his birth. However, by his own words we are told that God spoke to him telling him to relocate from Judah, the southern Israeli kingdom to Israel the northern kingdom and to prophecy to them of coming doom if they do not return to the ways of the Lord. According to chapter 1 verse 1 of the book, Amos prophesied during the reigns of Uzziah king of Judah (792-740BC) and Jeroboam II king of Israel (793-753BC). Amos prophecies were made at least 19 years before Samaria fell in 721BC.

The Biblical account is that by this time both kingdoms had reached great political and military heights. The Israeli people of both kingdoms became smug, living a life style of oppression of the poor, of corruption, extravagant indulgence, luxurious living, idolatry, bribery, mockery of religious feasts and immorality. God despised this life style his chosen people had slipped into. Speaking through Amos God describes the present life style of the Israelis and then in chapter 5

beginning at verse 21 God tells us how much He despises this. **“I hate, I despise your religious feasts: I cannot stand your assemblies, even through you bring me burnt offerings and grain offerings I will not accept them. Though you bring choice fellowship offerings; I will have no regard for them. Away with the noise of your songs! I will not listen to the music of your harps. But let justice roll on like a river, righteousness like a never failing stream”.**

Again, as previously mentioned, Amos’ prophecies seem to be an accumulation of most of the prophecies from the other prophets against the Israeli and surrounding nations and for that reason I will exclude them.

I would first like to put forward an outline of the book of Amos and then quote a number of prophecies with the intent of suggesting their fulfillment. I have presented the prophecies in bold face type. Chapter 1-3 to 2-16: the judgment of the Nations including the Arameans and their cities chapter 1 verse 5 **“the people of Aram will go into exile”**, against the Philistines and their cities **“I will not turn back my wrath because she took captive whole communities and sold them to Edom, I will send fire upon the walls of Gaza” “I will turn my hand against Ekron till the last of the Philistines is dead”**, and against the Edomites and their cities **“because he pursued his brother with a sword stifling all compassion, because his anger**

raged continually and his fury flamed unchecked I will send fire upon Teman that will consume the fortress of Bozrah", (also see the chapter The fall of The Edomites for the historical Edom and its demise.

Remember Esdras also prophesied Edom would cease to exist.) and against Ammon which is modern day Amman, **"because he ripped open the pregnant women Gilead in order to extend his borders I will set fire to walls of Rabbah" her king will go into exile he and his officials together**". To list all of Amos' prophecies against Israel and Judah's neighbors one would almost have to copy the entire book of Amos and for that reason I strongly suggest that you read Amos. I can assure you that in Amos you will find the pending Godly judgment not nice. Having, said that, the Israelis could have avoided God's wrath, simply by changing their life style.

The woes against Israel, the Jewish Northern kingdom, and Judah, the Jewish Southern kingdom, are given in the Bible's Old Testament Book of Amos as follows: Chapter 3:5:17 Oracles against Israel, announcement of exile. Chapters 5:18-6:14, Divine retribution. Chapters 7:1-9:10 Israel's future restored. Chapters 9:11-9:15. The following are a few of the prophecies against Israel the northern kingdom and Judah the southern Kingdom. Chapter 3:11; **"An enemy will overrun your land: he will pull down your strongholds and plunder your fortresses"**. Chapter 3 verses 14-15; **"On the**

day I punish Israel for her sins, I will destroy the altars of Bethel; the horns of the altar will be cut off and fall to the ground. I will tear down the winter house along with the summer house; the houses adorned with ivory will be destroyed and the mansions will be demolished. Chapter 4 verse 2 -3; “The time will surely come when you will be taken away with hooks, the last of you with fish hooks. You will each go straight out through breaks in the wall and you will be cast out toward Harmon”.

Chapter 6 verse 14; “I will stir up a nation against you, O house of Israel, that will oppress you all the way from Lebo Hamath to the valley of Arbah”. Chapter 7 verse 9 and 11; “The high places of Isaac will be destroyed and the sanctuaries of Israel will be ruined; with my sword I will rise against the house of Jeroboam”. “Jeroboam will die by the sword and Israel will surely go into exile, away from their native land”. In chapter 7 verse 17 Amos then prophesied against Amaziah the High Priest; “Your wife will become a prostitute in the city and your sons and daughters will fall by the sword. Your land will be measured and divided up, and you yourself will die in a pagan country. And Israel will certainly go into exile away from their native land”.

Chapter 8 verses 2 and 3 The Lord declares to Amos: “The time is ripe for the people of Israel; I will spare them no longer. In that day declares the Sovereign Lord the songs in the Temple will turn to wailing. Many, Many bodies flung everywhere! Silence!”

Now let me examine historical events to try and conclude whether or not Amos' prophecies came to fruition.

The Assyrians in the tenth century BC began a powerful and systematic advance against neighboring nations. In 853 they turned toward Palestine. They defeated Ben-hadad of Damascus but could not take Karkar. Internal strife and coalitions kept Assyria at bay for almost the next hundred years.

However, Assyria under Tiglath-pileser (744-727BC) started to again raise her ugly head. They invaded the west and by 732BC had conquered Galilee, the Plain of Sharon and Gilead from Israel and made Israel and Judah pay tribute to experience peace. Tiglath-pileser's successor Shalmaneser V (726-722BC) besieged Samaria. He died during the siege and his successor Sargon 2nd (721-705BC) took the city in 721BC. The

Illustrated Columbia Encyclopedia page 5505 describes the siege of Samaria as follows:

"He completed Shalmaneser's siege of Samaria in 721 B.C., thus destroying the northern Israeli kingdom forever. In 720 he defeated a coalition of enemies at Raphia. He captured Carchemish, subdued Babylon and advanced eastward to Kurdistan. He founded the great Assyrian Dynasty. Excavations of his palace at Dur Sharrukin (Korsabad) have uncovered his personal annals, in which he recorded his detailed destruction of Samaria".

The northern kingdom and most of her surrounding neighbors disappeared as

Sargon 2nd deported thousand of the captives to Assyria. He recorded in his annals that he deported 27, 290 Israelites into exile.

The fall of the Northern kingdom is recorded in the Bible's book of 2nd Kings Chapter 17 beginning at verse 1. It parallels the above account and then adds that the exiles were taken to Halah, in Gozan on the Harbor River and in the towns of the Medes. Sachar, in his "A History of the Jews" page 55 notes the fall of the Northern Kingdom as follows *"Samaria defended its self for nearly three years, but it was the final stand of despair. Nearly thirty thousand inhabitants were deported and the country was resettled with captives from other lands. No strong sense of nationalism had developed in Israel and it was therefore not strange that the deported tribes quickly assimilated. After a life story of two centuries the northern kingdom came to an inglorious end. The country fell out of the ken of history and was mentioned only when it came into contact with communities more virile and creative"*.

It was common practice for conquering nations to kill almost all the men and boys. Those who were not killed were then castrated making them into eunuchs to serve in the conquering king's courts. Pregnant women had their bellies ripped open thus causing not only their death but also the death of the child they were carrying. Women young and old who were deemed not to be pregnant were taken captive and almost

always forced into prostitution. Some of the captive women actually were lucky enough to become wives of their captives. As wives some were obviously mistreated while others were treated very well by their captive husbands. The Assyrians, to control captives with a precious small number of guards, were known to put a ring through the nose or lower lip of the persons that were taken captive. A rope was then threaded through the rings thus tying the captives together with very little chance of them escaping. How could the prophets preceding Amos and in particular Amos have possibly known, without their God telling them of the pending danger from the Assyrians and the consequences of the Assyrian invasion? Remember Amos was prophesying some 19 or 20 years before Samaria fell while in the case of the other prophets, their prophecies were made centuries before Samaria fell.

The Assyrian empire flourished for approximately another century and then started to decay. In the meantime the Babylonians were becoming a force to reckon with. The Babylonian campaign moving westward had already captured the Assyrian nation including Israel; in 586BC the Babylonians under Nebuchadnezzar captures Judah the southern kingdom, destroys Jerusalem and exiles the Jews to Babylon.

Baruch the writer of the first five chapters of The Book of Baruch found in the Catholic's Bible's Old Testament certainly

understood why he and the rest of the Jewish captives were slaves in Babylon. In chapter 1 starting at verse 13 and continuing on through and including chapter 3 verse 29, Baruch offers a confession of guilt and ask his God for deliverance. These people over hundreds of years did not heed God's warnings to change there life style. They chose instead to sin in the eyes of their God. These sins included: worshipping idols, stealing, robbing, murder, false witness, drunkenness, unfaithfulness, homosexuality, prostitution both male and female to name a few. These Jewish people did not heed God's warnings and for that reason God eventually brought judgment upon them. Baruch asks his God to forgive him and the rest of the captive Jewish people. He states that the Jewish people have now repented and are trying to live a Godly life. Baruch asks his God to have a change of heart and free His people. God hears his prayers and tells Baruch that he will indeed free his people. This freedom occurs (chapter 3 verse 30 through the end of the book) when the Chaldeans and Medes join forces and conquer Babylon wiping her off the face of the earth forever. This event also fulfilled Isaiah prophecy made at least 150 years before. Isaiah's prophesied that his God would destroy Babylon never to rise again. This prophecy can be found by reading Isaiah chapter 14 verses 22 and 23.

The Babylonian campaign is dealt with in greater detail in the chapter of the events of King Hezekiah and Zedekiah. Babylon's

glory would also fade. In 538 Cyrus the Great defeats the Babylonians and releases the Jews from slavery and permits them to return to Israel. The Jews remain here until 70AD but are first under Persian rule, then under Egyptian rule, then under Syrian-Seleucids rule and then under Roman rule. In 70AD the Romans, under Titus, capture Jerusalem destroy the city including the temple and exile the Jews. On page 545 of his book "Caesar and Christ", Will Durant states that Josephus places the number of Jews who lost their lives during this campaign at 1,197,000 however Tacitus calculated the number to be 600,000. The number of fugitives sold into slavery is estimated to be 97,000.

This tiny land since around 1,200 BC has been conquered and occupied many times until in 1947 a UN resolution proposes to create a Jewish and Arab state in Palestine with Jerusalem as a neutral United Nations-governed zone. In 1948 Israel declares its independence and Arab forces attack her; the 1949 armistice gives Jerusalem to Israel and the Old City to Jordan. *"Along with the declaration of independence was a proclamation known as the Law of Return (passed by the Knesset July 5, 1950) giving every Jew the right to immigrate to Israel and to claim Israel citizenship with a minimum of formality"* ("Inside Jerusalem a City of Destiny" Arnold Olson page 36). Mr. Olson also states on page 35 in his book that the total population of Israel in 1948 was 770,000

and by 1966 it had swelled to 2,643,700 of which 2,333,700 were Jews who returned to Israel from almost every country of the world.

During the Six Day War of 1967 the Israelis capture the Old City and other outlying regions that now encompass what is known as the state of Israel. Perhaps it would be appropriate at this time to mention a prophecy that Ezekiel made. Ezekiel probably made the prophecy some seven years prior to the Babylonians capturing Israel and Judah. Ezekiel in the book that bears his name beginning at chapter 37 verse 21 prophecies **“This is what the sovereign Lord says I will take the Israelites out of the nations where they have gone. I will make them one nation in the land on the mountains of Israel. There will be one king over them and they will never again be two nations or be divided into two kingdoms”** (NIV). One wonders how without divine intervention that Ezekiel could possibly know that some two thousand five hundred years later that the descendents from the northern and southern kingdoms would return to those areas and that it would be one nation.

Amazingly as Professor Sachar, Dimont and Arnold Olson and the others point out during all of this time, from about 1,200 BC until now they the Jews never lost their religion, their customs or their identity and now **have returned to the land promised to them by their God.** Could these events fulfill the prophecies in the Bible of the Jews being

scattered and gathered?? It appears so. It is of interest here to point out other great civilizations that conquered Israel and took the Jewish people into slavery such as the Assyrians and the Babylonians have now vanished from the face of the earth, however the Jews according to the Biblical account **the people chosen by God himself** remain and are flourishing within the land promised to them by their God.

Sulamith Ish-Kishor an American and a lady of Jewish descent in her book “History of Israel from the Second temple to the Present Time: Hebrew Publishing also gives a comprehensive outline of Jewish Diaspora. Her account includes among other things the names of High Priests, priest and in more recent times the names of the Rabbis who were involved.

Arnold Olson, on pages 41 through and including page 47 of his book “Inside Jerusalem a City of Destiny”, points out that the Jewish people returned to Israel from 102 nations. Many of the returnees also officially changed their names to Hebrew names borrowed from the Bible or from the records of Jewish heroes. Many spoke the language that was the mother tongue of the country they returned from. Many also spoke Yiddish as well as the language of the country they emigrated from. Many eye brows were raised and some open protests were voiced when it was announced that the official language of the state would be Hebrew. The thought

behind this was that; **“A common language is thus one of the secrets of the unity of the people”**. Israel today is a new nation as was the case thousands of years ago; it has the same name; the same religion **and the same language**.

Again turning to Biblical scriptures we find an interesting prophecy. In the book of Zephaniah who prophesied during the reign of King Josiah (640-609BC) chapter 3 verse 9 we read **“ For then will I turn to the people a pure language, that they may all call upon the name of the Lord, to serve him with one consent”** (KJV). Could the new state of Israel having adopted Hebrew as its official language fulfilled this prophecy? It certainly seems so.

Chapter Fifteen: Biblical Prophecies against World Powers and Nations.

Biblical Prophecies against Edom:

Edom was a country who Isaiah, Jeremiah, Ezekiel, Amos and Obadiah prophesied that their God would destroy and that she would never raise again. The story of Edom begins in the Bible's Old Testament Book of Genesis chapter 25. Reduced to its simplest form here is the Biblical account: Abraham's son Isaac, at forty years of age, marries Rebekah, daughter of Bethuel the Aramean from Paddan Aram and the sister of Laban the Armean. (Gn. 25:20) Rebekah becomes pregnant with twin boys. The first born was named Esau who was also known as Edom, while the second twin was born hanging onto his brother's heel, was named Jacob. Esau became a great hunter while Jacob was more domicile and stayed amongst the tents. Isaac favored Esau while Rebekah loved Jacob (Gn. 25:24-28). This parental influence would obviously cause ill feelings between the twins. To further accentuate this relationship Jacob convinced Esau who had just returned from hunting and was very hungry to sell him his birth right for a meal (Gn. 25:32-34). Esau being a renegade at age forty and going against the wishes of his parents marries two Hittite women Judith and Basemath (Gn. 26:34-35). In chapter 27 we are told that Jacob, with his mother's help, tricks his father Isaac into blessing him instead of the first born, his brother Esau.

This irritates Esau who plots to kill his brother. We are also told in chapter 28:8-9 that Esau, realizing how distasteful Canaanite women were to his parents in addition to the wives he already had, marries Mahalath, the sister of Nebaioth and daughter of Ishmael son of Abraham. Mahalath would then be his first cousin. Jacob eventually takes his family and goes down into Egypt where he dies. His descendents are the people that Moses, some four hundred years later, leads out of Egypt.

In chapter 36 we learn that Esau is now in Edom also called the hill country of Seir. He has married two more women; Adah daughter of Elon the Hittite and Oholibamah daughter of Zibeon the Hivite (Deuteronomy 2:36) informs us that the descendents of Esau had driven the Emites and Horites from Edom and possessed their land). This entire 36th chapter is devoted to Esau's genealogy and then concludes by giving the names of all the kings and chiefs of Edom who also were descendents of Esau. Apparently the descendents of Esau were warring peoples. The writers of Illustrated Columbia Encyclopedia on page 1964 describe them as follows: "*Edom or Idumaea or Idumea mountainous country, called Mt. Seir; given to Esau and his descendents. It extended along the eastern border of the Arabah valley from the Dead Sea to Elath on the Gulf of Aqaba. The history of the Edomites was one of continuous hostility and warfare with their neighbors – Jews, Assyrians and Syrians – until finally they were subdued by the*

Maccabees and merged with the Jews. The Romans grouped Idumaea with Judaea, Samaria and Galilee, in one procurator ship. After the destruction of Jerusalem, Idumaea was included in Arabia Petraea". Sachar in his book "A History of the Jews" outlines the Edomites wars with Israel as follows: page 32 fighting against King Saul, page 36 King David gives them resounding blows, page 38 Edom breaks away from Israel at the beginning of King Solomon's reign, page 41 by marrying princesses from Edom, King Solomon forms an alliances with the Edomites, page 41 John Hyrcannus defeats Edom and gives them an alternative to become Jews or be exiled. Sachar also points out on page 114 that the **hated Herod** was from the Edomites. Biblical passages regarding the conflicts between Israel and Edom to name a few would be as follows: Numbers 20:14-22, 1st Kings 11:14-17, 1st Kings 28:47 and 2nd Kings 8:20-22. Edom and John Hyrcannus is also mentioned in 1st Macabees a book in the Bible followed by Catholics.

The prophecies against Edom, that she would be destroyed, begin with the prophet Isaiah chapter 34 verse 5 in the book that bears his name, Jeremiah chapter 49 verses 7-17, the entire 35th chapter of Ezekiel, Amos chapter 1 beginning at verse 11 and the entire book of Obadiah. In Obadiah at verse 10 God speaking through his prophet says "**Because of violence against your brother Jacob you will be covered with shame: you will be**

destroyed forever”. Verse 18 reads as follows (NIV): **“The house of Jacob will be a fire and the house of Joseph a flame; the house of Esau will be stubble and they will set it on fire and consume it. There will be no survivors from the house of Esau”.**

Edom and the Edomites who were the descendents of Esau disappeared from the face of the earth when John Hyrcannus at the end of his second campaign against them gave the handful of survivors a choice of Judaism or exile. The year was 125BC. The writers of the “Mysteries of the Bible” on page 322 describe the event as follows: *“Israel’s Hasmonean king, John Hyrcannus, conquered the Idumeans and forcibly converted them to Judaism. Most Idumeans accepted the conversion and within a generation considered themselves wholly Jewish”.* Ruth Samuels in her book “Pathways through Jewish History” on page 106 describes Edom’s defeat by John Hyrcanus as follows: *“After fortifying Judea’s borders east of the Jordan to prevent an attack in his absence, John Hyrcanus began a new campaign. Turning south to Edom (Idumea), he conquered and annexed that country as King David had done before him. John Hyrcanus forced the Idumeans to adopt Judaism”.*

How could the Biblical prophets mentioned above, who lived hundreds of years before the fall of Edom in 125BC possibly know that this nation and its inhabitants would disappear from the face of

the earth forever. The answer seems to be simple, their God told them.

Biblical Prophecies against Assyria:

Now I should like to examine the prophecies put forward in the Christian Bible against the people of the great city of Nineveh which is a place in Iraqi It is known in modern times as Mount Koyunjik. This huge mound of rubble is the site of the great Assyrian capital city of NINEVEH. This site was first discovered by Claude James Rich in 1820 and excavations were commenced by Paul Emil Botta in 1847. Nineveh, in the northern part of the Euphrates valley, was re-established by the Assyrian King Nimrod shortly after the great flood. Nineveh rose to world power around 900BC and soon after began to wage war on Israel. The Biblical account regarding Nineveh is that in about 785BC God sent Jonah to Nineveh (Jonah chapter 1 verse 2 and Jonah chapter 3 verses 1 &2) in an effort to turn it aside from its brutality against Israel. Jonah's preaching convinced the Ninevites to turn from their wicked ways and because of that God had compassion and at that time did not destroy the city (Jonah chapter 3 verses 6 to 10). In the Christian Bible in Jonah chapter 4 verse 11 we read that at the time Nineveh had more than 120,000 people living within its walls. Archeological excavations show that Nineveh was approximately 30 miles long and 10 miles wide. It was protected by three (3) moats and five (5) walls. "Nineveh's inner

city wall was “fifty feet thick and a hundred feet high, stretched for seven miles around the city and was pierced by fifteen beautiful decorated gates. Eighteen mountain streams poured into the walled city and kept the city’s water supply clean and fresh” (The Ancient and Medieval World: Rogers, Adam and Brown page 82). These mountain streams and the fact that she was built in a river valley, as we shall read later on, probably led to her destruction.

King Sennacherib in 700BC made Nineveh the capital of the Assyrian empire and soon after under King Ashurbanipal (669-627) the people returned to their wicked ways and when waging war became extremely brutal in battle and against their captives. Again these actions particularly waging war against Judah and Israel angered God who sent Nahum to Nineveh to preach to the people of Nineveh. In the Christian Bible the entire book of Nahum is almost exclusively God’s woes against Nineveh. Within this book are statements such as **“You will have no descendants to bear your name, I (God) will prepare your grave, for you are vile”** (Nahum 1-14). **“The river gates are thrown open and the palace collapses”** (Nahum 2-6). **“Woe to the city of blood, full of lies, full of plunder, never without victims! The crack of whips, the clatter of wheels, galloping horses and jolting chariots! Charging cavalry, flashing swords and glittering spears! Many casualties, piles of dead, bodies without number, people stumbling over the corpses, all because of**

the wanton lust of a harlot, alluring, the mistress of sorceries who enslaved nations by her prostitution and the peoples by her witchcraft” (Nahum 3:1-4). The prophet Nahum who lived 663-607BC most likely made these prophecies in about 630BC eighteen years before Nineveh fell never to rise again and not one person living within the city survived.

The history of the Assyrians from the time that they began their conquering march in 900BC until they took Israel the Northern kingdom in 721BC is for the most part well documented in Sachar’s “A History of the Jews”, and in Samuels’ “Pathways through Jewish History”. Samuels in her book pages 60 through and including 70 outlines the rise and fall of Assyria. On page 67 she makes a very interesting comment. She points out that after Samaria fell the Assyrians turned their attention to Judah and besieged Jerusalem. She comments as follows: *“When it seemed that: surrender seemed inevitable an unexpected ally came to the rescue of the beleaguered city. The plague that dreaded disease of ancient times providently struck the Assyrian camp. Thousands of Assyrian soldiers perished in the epidemic and were buried in hastily dug mass graves. His army sadly diminished, Sennacherib withdrew from Jerusalem”*. This account in the Protestant Bible is recorded in Isaiah chapter 37 verse 36 and again in 2nd Kings chapter 19 verse 35. Here we are told the angel of the Lord killed all the Assyrian army. Herodatus a Greek

Historian interprets this to be the plaque. Perhaps he is correct because in the Catholic Bible's book of Sirach in chapter 48 verse 21 it is written "God struck the camp of the Assyrians and routed them with a plaque". From then on the Assyrians were on the defensive, exhausted from disease and by the drafts of wars the empire began to crumble. The Scythians invaded Assyria in 626BC and this was the beginning of the end of Nineveh. In 614BC the Babylonians led by Nabopolassar and Medes led by Cyaxeres joined with the Scythians and laid siege to Nineveh. Nabopolassar died and was replaced by Nebuchadnezzar. Remember the previously mentioned mountain streams, suddenly in 612BC an unexpected flood from these streams that normally supplied the city with fresh water washed away part of the city's great wall and flooded part of the city. The attackers poured through the breached walls. The destruction was so great that the entire city was destroyed and all of its inhabitants killed. What had been for centuries, the greatest empire the world had ever known now ceased to exist. In the ruins of what was once the great city of Nineveh the Medes, Babylonians and Scythians dug a great pit, into which they deposited the corpses. This exercise of digging a great pit that became a mass grave seems to confirm what Ezekiel's wrote in the Bible's book that bears his name chapter 32 verse 22 and 23 regarding Nineveh the capital city of Assyria. Ezekiel wrote "**Assyria is there with her whole army: she is surrounded by the**

graves of all her slain, all who have fallen by the sword. Their graves are in the depths of the pit and her army lies around her grave. All who spread terror in the land of the living are slain, fallen by the sword”.

Some eighteen (18) years before 612BC Nahum in 630BC prophesied the demise of this great city. Did the fall of Nineveh in 612BC fulfill the Biblical prophecies of Nahum and Ezekiel? **It would seem so.**

Biblical Prophecies against the Babylonian Nation and the city of Babylon:

Conquering nations during the Assyrian to Roman Empire eras were cruel and merciless. The soldiers of invading armies often slaughtered all infants and children, and ripped open the bellies of pregnant women leaving them to die; thus there would be no future warriors. Some able bodied men and young boys were castrated and now being a eunuch unable to have sex and reproduce were then forced into slavery. Women and girls suffered the most, with their husbands, or their mother and father dead they were often forced into slavery and prostitution. This then was the fate of the Jewish people when the northern kingdom fell to the Babylonians sometime between 721-705BC and when the southern kingdom fell in 586BC.

In the Bible's Old Testament in the book of the prophet Isaiah we read of the woes that he preached against Babylon. We do not know when Isaiah was born however we do know that he lived until at least the year 681BC and theologians believe that the book of Isaiah was most likely composed before 701BC. Some of Isaiah's prophecies against Babylon and the King of Babylon are as follows: Isaiah chapter 13 verses 19 & 20 **"Babylon the jewel of kingdoms, the glory of the Babylonians pride, will be overthrown by God like Sodom and Gomorrah. She will never be inhabited again or lived in through all generations: no Arab will pitch his tent there, no shepherd will rest his flocks there"**. In Isaiah chapter 13 verses 15 to 20 and again in chapter 14 verses 22 & 23 the prophet again warns of the impending doom from God against Babylon. They read as follows: **"I will rise up against them, declares the Lord Almighty (God). I will cut off from Babylon her name and survivors, her off spring and descendents, declares the Lord (God). I will turn her into a place for owls and into a swampland; I will sweep her with the broom of destruction, declares the Lord Almighty (God)"**. The prophet Jeremiah (640-586BC) in chapters 50 and 51 of the Bible's book that bears his name and which was most likely composed in 626 BC makes similar prophecies against Babylon. In chapter 50 verses 9 and 10 we read the warning as follows: **"For I will stir up and bring against Babylon an alliance of great**

nations from the land of the north. They will take up their positions against her and from the north she will be captured. Their arrows will be like skilled warriors who do not return empty handed. So Babylonia will be plundered all who plunder will have their fill, declares the Lord (God)”.

Perhaps no where is it more plainly prophesied the Medes would take Babylon then in Isaiah chapter 13 verse 17 when Isaiah who died in 681BC wrote **“I am stirring up against them the Medes”**. Then in chapter 14 verses 22 and 23 Isaiah provides us with a vivid picture of the pending God initiated doom against Babylon.

Historically here is what happened to Babylon. The Babylonians were defeated by the Persians, a great company of nations that included the Medes, the Ararat, the Minnis and the Ashkenazs. The great city of Babylon was captured in 539BC by Cyrus and by 536BC the Babylonian nation ceased to exist. Her cities were laid waste never to be rebuilt. Her inhabitants apparently were all killed, no one escaped. How could Isaiah possibly, have known 162 years before and Jeremiah at least 87 years before the fall of Babylon what was about to happen? **Could it be that their God told them this was going to happen?**

Biblical Prophecies against Israel (Northern Kingdom) and Judah (Southern Kingdom):

Volumes upon volumes have been written and I suspect that in the future hundreds upon hundreds more articles will be written regarding the Bible and its prophecies. However, within the confines of this document I shall address those prophecies embodied within Deuteronomy, Micah, Isaiah, Jeremiah and Kings regarding the fall of Judah and Israel and in particular Jerusalem and the prophecies scattered throughout the Bible pertaining to Jesus.

Let me first address the historically proven prophecies about Judah and Israel. It is generally accepted by historians that the Book of Deuteronomy was most likely written approximately 1406 BC, Micah between 750 and 686BC, Isaiah dates to about 701 BC while Jeremiah dates to around 626 BC. 1 Kings dates between 621BC and 597BC while 2 Kings dates to 561BC. The 28th chapter of Deuteronomy and the 37th and 38th chapters of Jeremiah contain the prophecies regarding the fall of the Judean and Israeli cities. For the purposes of this document only those prophecies regarding, the fall of the cities, those events whose authenticity can be historically proven will be addressed, casting aside those of the atrocities of life within a city under siege.

The Biblical prophecies referred to above regarding the siege and fall of Judah and Israel are as follows:

1. **“A nation whose language you do not understand will come against you”**. Deuteronomy 28:49, 28:52.
2. **“Like an eagle a fierce looking nation”**. Deuteronomy 26:49-50.
3. **“They will devour or destroy everything that you have”**.
Deuteronomy 28:51
Jeremiah 38:2.
4. **“The temple and royal palace will be burned to the ground”**. Jeremiah 37:6-8, 38:18, 38:23.
5. **“Those who survive will be few in numbers and scattered among all nations”**. Deuteronomy 28:62-64.
6. **“You will be taken by ship to Egypt and sold as slaves”**. Deuteronomy 28:68.
“You will build houses but not live in them. “ be married but another will take her and ravish her”.
Deuteronomy 28: 30-32
7. **“All the women and children will be taken by the Babylonian king”**
Jeremiah 38:21-23.
8. **“Then Isaiah said to Hezekiah”**.
“Hear the word of the lord. The time will surely come when everything in your palace and all that you fathers have stored up until this day, will be carried off to Babylon. Nothing will be left says the Lord. And some of your descendents, your own flesh and

blood, that will be born to you, will be taken away, and will become eunuchs in the palace of the king of Babylon” 2 Kings Chapter 20 verses 16-18. (Note: What is so unusual about this ninth prophecy is that at the time it was made Assyria was the world power Babylon was not).

The people of Judah and of Israel during this time, a period of approximately 800 years, between 1400 and 600 BC, did not keep God’s laws on how to live their lives. God kept speaking to them through his Prophets warning them if they did not change their ways He would punish them. His warnings from time to time were in fact heard by a few righteous Kings who encouraged the people to live by God’s laws. Unfortunately, they returned to worshipping pagan gods, practiced homosexuality using both male and female prostitutes who were usually housed in the temple, they returned to practice child sacrifices and to have forbidden wives as well as casting aside the Ten Commandments. The Biblical account of the Kings of Judah and Israel, life within the state, and what provoked God’s anger and the consequences can be found in the Bible’s Old Testament books of Deuteronomy, Micah, Isaiah and 1st and 2nd Kings and in particular 2 Kings chapter 23.

Historically here is what happened: In 605 BC the Babylonians invaded Judah capturing city after city, town after town until on January 15, 588 BC they laid seize to

Jerusalem. The city fell on July 18, 586 BC, or just over two and a half years from the beginning of the siege.

It is highly unlikely that the general public at large would have understood the Babylonian language, as the mother tongue of the Judeans was Hebrew. This then would seem to fulfill the 1st of the above prophecies. The eagle either symbolized or was the insignia of the Babylonian, Syrian and Roman armies, fulfilling the 2nd of the above prophecies. After Jerusalem fell in 586 BC and after the plunder was carried away, Nebuchadrezzar the Babylonian king ordered, Ab, Nebuzaradan the Babylonian Commander In Chief to raze the walls and burn the city including the temple and the royal palaces. Most of the surviving population, including the Judean king Zedekiah who had his entire family slain before him, had his eyes put out, then they were put in chains, and taken captive to Babylon and Egypt thus fulfilling the rest of the above prophecies.

Even though the Israel and Judean fighting strength were either in exile or had been destroyed, small pockets of resistance existed, at Mizpah all members of the Babylonian garrison were butchered by Judeans who later fled to Egypt.

The exile of the peoples from the Northern Kingdom of Israel resulted in it ceasing to exist. The Babylonians continued to occupy and control the territory that had

been Israel and also the Southern Kingdom of Judah until 539BC when a coalition of Medes and Persians conquered all of the Babylonian empire. The Persian King, Cyrus the Great humanely treated the descendents of the Assyrian and Babylonian captives. In fact he allowed anyone who chooses to, to return to their homeland. He also permitted and financed the Temple in Jerusalem to be rebuilt.

In succeeding centuries many nations including Syria, Egypt, Greece and Rome invaded and occupied Judah. An independent Judean nation was again established between 128 BC and 106 BC. Judah lost its independence to the Romans in the 1st century BC, by becoming first a tributary kingdom, then a province of the Roman Empire. Independence was again established in 76 BC. It was short lived. The Romans had allied themselves to the Maccabees and interfered again in 63 BC, at the end of the Third Mithridatic War, when the proconsul Pompeius Magnus ("Pompey the Great") stayed behind to make the area secure for Rome. Queen Alexandra Salome had recently died, and a civil war broke out between her sons, Hyrcanus II and Aristobulus II. Pompeius restored Hyrcanus but political rule passed to the Herodian family who ruled as client kings. The Judeans despised Roman occupation and the Herodians and became involved in guerrilla warfare. In the year 63 BC Roman soldiers under Pompey laid siege to Jerusalem. The siege lasted three months.

After it fell, Pompey's general Faustus allowed a terrible massacre to occur; twelve thousand Jews lost their lives and a great number of captives were led off to Rome. At this time the city escaped the Roman torch.

During the next 26 years Judah was subjected to numerous invasions and the Romans to constant and persistent Judean resistance. In 40 BC Herod decided that he would put an end to the resistance and ordered his Roman armies to march against Judah. Mareshah was first to fall, Sepphoris fell in 38 BC followed by Galilee, Jericho and then Jerusalem in 37 BC. The Roman soldiers were permitted to freely pillage and kill until finally Herod called a halt to the slaughter. Again, even though they were defeated, the Jews offered stubborn resistance. They despised Roman occupation. In retaliation in 4 BC the rebuilt city of Sepphoris that apparently was a beautiful city was burned to the ground by the Romans and again most of the surviving population was sold into slavery. It is of interest to note that Sepphoris was located in very close proximity to Nazareth. The Biblical Joseph, Mary's husband a carpenter, lived in Nazareth and it is highly probable he would have worked on many of the buildings there. The Judean patriots continued their resistance until finally starting in 67 AD Rome decided enough was enough and set upon a course to squash all resistance. Jotapata, Galilee and Joppa all fell by August and Tarichea in September. Those Jews not slaughtered were sold into slavery.

Perera fell in sixty eight (68). Sixty nine (69) might have been a year of relative calm as there does not appear to be any recorded conflicts or victories.

The Zealots continued their guerilla warfare until finally the Romans had enough and systematically set out to squash all resistance that eventually ended with the siege of Jerusalem. This great city fell in 70AD. Dean Milman in his book “The Fall of Jerusalem and The Roman Conquest of Judea” in chapter 3 pages 65 through and including page 88 quotes Josephus and gives a detailed description of what life within the city at this time was like. It is of no value here to get into explicit detail however, one account by Josephus simply must be put forward. Having said this I must also point out that at this time Josephus was already in the Roman camp and for this reason his account of the events within the city are not eye witness accounts. On page 84 there is the account of Mary whose father was Eleazar of the village of Bethzebab. This woman apparently killed her suckling infant son, roasted him, ate half of him and offered the other half to the fighting men within the city. This incident seems to bring the prophecy of Deuteronomy chapter 28 verses 53-57 to fruition. The account here is of wide spread cannibalism and in particular of a woman eating her son.

On page 109 Milman also states that no Christians perished during this siege. The

direct quote being; *“The Christians we learn from Eusebius, abandoned the city previous to the siege (by divine command, according to the author) and took refuge in Pella, a small town on the further side of the Jordan. The constant tradition of the Church has been that no one of that faith perished during all the havoc which attended on this most awful visitation”*.

All of the above prophecies made by prophets who in some cases prophesied hundreds of years before the conquests of Judah (Israel) began and in particular those of Jerusalem appear to be fulfilled. The revelations these prophets received by their own admission came from their God. **Is this not conclusive evidence that God exists?**

I will now regress back in time to prophecies made by Habakkuk.

Habakkuk’s conversation with his God regarding Judah:

The Biblical prophet Habakkuk lived and prophesied during the years of 605-597BC. The book that bears his name is different from other books of the Bible’s Old Testament in the sense that two of the three chapters are the recorded conversations between Habakkuk and his God. I have chosen to put forward only a couple of the quotations from the book of Habakkuk. It is a very short book consisting of only 3 chapters and for that

reason suggest the reader may want to read this book in its entirety.

The dialogue between Habakkuk and his God is as follows: Chapter 1 verses 2-4 Habakkuk asks why does all the evil in Judah go unpunished? God's response in chapter 1 verses 5-11 is that he is rising up the Babylonians to punish the Judean people. Having received this response Habakkuk then questions God in chapter 1 verses 12 through chapter 2 verse 1: why he is going to use a people so wicked to punish the Judeans? God's response is recorded in chapter 2 verse 2-20 here we read that God instructs Habakkuk to **“write down the revelation and make it plain on tablets so a herald may run with it”** God continues by telling Habakkuk that in the fulfillment of time Judah will be punished by the Babylonians who will conquer Judah and after that the Babylonians will also then be punished. Even though this is to happen we read in chapter 2 verse 4 God tells Habakkuk **“but the righteous will live by his faith”**.

Historically we know that in 588BC the Babylonians invaded Judah and completely conquered her when Jerusalem fell in 586BC. The Babylonians were later defeated by the Parathions. Based upon the information within Habakkuk can we conclude what Habakkuk's God revealed to him at least 11 years prior, came to fulfillment when Babylon took Judah and then Babylon was later defeated? **It would seem so.**

Biblical prophecies against the Judean King Hezekiah:

King Hezekiah reigned from 715 BC until 686 BC. The Biblical account of Hezekiah's reign is that he was a good king and seemed to have tried to follow God's commandments. He did however make a fatal error when he allowed a Babylonian envoy to view all the treasures of his palace. When Isaiah the prophet questioned Hezekiah as to what he had shown the envoy and was told he had shown the Babylonians everything, Isaiah then prophesied against the king. In the Bible's Old Testament book of 2nd Kings Chapter 20 verses 16 and 18 we find Isaiah's prophecy to King Hezekiah. It reads as follows: **“Then Isaiah said to Hezekiah” “Hear the word of the Lord: The time will surely come when everything in your palace and all that your fathers have stored up until this day, and everything that your fathers stored up until this day, shall be carried off to Babylon; Nothing shall be left, says the Lord” “Some of your descendents, your own flesh and blood that will be born to you will be taken away and will become eunuchs in the palace of the king of Babylon”** What is so unusual about this prophecy is that Assyria was the world power at this time. Babylonia was not.

Historically here is what happened. In 705BC Sargon's armies invaded and by 701BC had seized Judah and captured the city of Jerusalem. Hezekiah was stripped of his

power, treasures, his palace ornaments and lost his territory. Even his daughters went to enrich the conqueror's harem (Sachar A history of the Jews page 57). Conflicts continued with various nations striving to control the world as it existed at that time. Finally in 597BC the powerful Babylonian king Nebuchadnezzar himself sacked and plundered Judah and followed the Assyrian policy of transporting the most important elements of the population away to Babylon (Sachar A History of the Jews page 59). Johoiachin king of Judah, who was the 5th great grandson of Hezekiah, was taken in chains to Babylon. Coincidence, I think not. Prophesied more than 100 years before with out Devine intervention, how could Isaiah have possibly known that Babylon would become a world power and then take a descendent of King Hezekiah to Babylon?

Biblical prophecies against the Judean King Zedekiah:

The prophet Ezekiel wrote as follows concerning Zedekiah and the Judean nation: NIV: Ezekiel chapter 12 verses 10 through 14: **“say to them, this is what the Sovereign Lord says: This oracle concerns the Prince in Jerusalem and the whole house of Israel who are there”. “Say to them, I am a sign to you.” “As I have done, so it will be done to them. They will go into exile as captives”. “The prince among them will put his things on his shoulder at dusk and leave and a hole will be dug in the wall for him to go through. He will cover his face so**

that he cannot see the land. I will spread my net for him and he will be caught in my snare". "I will bring him into Babylonia, the land of the Chaldeans but he will not see it, and there he will die. "I will scatter all those around him, his staff and all his troops and I will pursue them with drawn sword".

King Zedekiah was the seventh king of Judah after Hezekiah who was on the throne from 728BC to 699BC. The six kings who ruled between them also submitted to first Assyrian and then Babylonia rule. Zedekiah whose original name was Mattanyahu (or Mattaniah) at the age of 21 ascended the throne of Judah when the Babylonian king Nebuchadnezzar II chose to replace king Jehoiachin with him. The Biblical account of King Zedekiah can be found 2 Kings Chapter 24 beginning with verse 17 through chapter 25 verse 11. Here we read that he ruled Judea from 597BC until 586BC. Eventually Zedekiah rebelled against the king of Babylon. This prompted Nebuchadnezzar to march against Judah in January of 588BC. Jerusalem was under siege until she fell in July of 586BC. Zedekiah, his sons and his soldiers fled the city into the plains of Jericho where he was captured and taken before Nebuchadnezzar at Riblah. Zedekiah's sons were put to death before his eyes and then Zedekiah was blinded, put in bronze shackles and taken to Babylon. After Nebuzaradan the Babylonia captain of the guard had plundered,

burned and destroyed the city of Jerusalem he led the remaining captives to Babylon.

Sachar "A History of the Jews" page 60 writes: "*At length Zedekiah flung down the gauntlet and ceased to pay tribute. Nebuchadnezzar, angry, with patience exhausted, swept down to end the bickering in his western dominions. Jerusalem was invested and slowly starved into submission. The sufferings of the besieged, prolonged for more than a year and a half were dreadful. The people perished so fast that it was impossible for the survivors to bury them properly. Corpses decayed in streets and cellars. Pestilence engendered by the poisonous stench of the city and by the unwholesome diet forced upon the people added to further horrors to the siege. At last the Chaldean troops broke through and the resistance ended abruptly. The temple was razed, its columns broken up; its huge stones sent rolling to the bottom of the valley of Kidron. The princes, the priest, and the elders were tortured and put to death before Zedekiah, who was himself blinded and carried off to Babylon in chains of brass.*" Zedekiah's family being murdered and his enslavement after he was blinded appear to have fulfilled Ezekiel's prophecy. Sachar continues "*A sorry remnant remained in the country side*". "*Life in Palestine continued despite all the military disasters. A considerable population remained and gradually recovered a little of their economic strength. Yet the desolation was serious*

enough to prove almost fatal". As noted earlier in God's conversations with Habakkuk, eventually the Babylonian empire succumbed to the Parthian Empire who in turn succumbed to the Roman Empire. This would then seem to fulfill God's words to Habakkuk.

In the Catholic Bible there is another very interesting book the Book of Baruch. Baruch was a secretary to the prophet Jeremiah, and the book was probably composed in Babylon while the Hebrew slaves were captive there. Baruch makes a confession of guilt for the Hebrews, he reviews all the sins committed by them against God and the warnings from God given by His prophets of the impending punishment if they do not return to God's way of how one should live their lives. These warnings given over a period of hundreds of years, were unheeded by the Hebrews, hence their defeat and captivity. In chapter 2 verses 21 through and including 26 God tells Baruch if they do not faithfully serve the King of Babylon he will extend their captivity. However in chapter 2 verses 31 through 34 God tells Baruch that if they change their ways and live according to God's laws, believe and offer praise to Him, the captivity will be shortened.

Part Two: Summary and Conclusions:

The Bible's historicity is confirmed by archeological digs that have unearthed places and cities mentioned in it.

The names of Biblical characters are found on clay tablets and other ancient documents. Isaiah, Jeremiah, Ezekeil, Obadiah and Esdras, who lived hundreds of years before 132 BC predicted that the descendents of Esau, the Edomites would disappear from the face of the earth. This happened when John Hyrcanus conquered them. Esdras also claimed that his God told him that Jesus, God's Son, would be born some four hundred years later.

Unearthing of the ruins of places such as Nineveh, Babylon (Babel), Jericho, Gibeon, and Megiddo to name a few confirms the historicity of the Bible. Artifacts discovered within these ruins confirm the names of Assyrian and Babylonian kings mentioned in the Bible and when they reigned.

The Bible claims that God created at least 100,000,000 million angels. They are of different hierarchy; within the pages of the Bible and the book of Enoch we are given the names of seven arch angels. We are told that they taught Enoch, who lived approximately 7,000 years ago, herbal remedies, the seasons, the movement of the sun and the moon and

that moon light was the sun light reflecting off its surface and that the earth was round. We did not understand these things until thousands of years later. In fact William Herschel (1738-1822) traced the movement and speed of the sun.

The writer of Palms 103 who most likely lived during the third century BC, and Isaiah, who lived at least until 681BC, knew that the earth was round and Job who lived before 1,000BC wrote that the earth was just hanging out in space. Did we not still believe in 1492 that the earth was flat, when Columbus set sail to prove once and for all that it was round?

In chapter 47 of the Bible's book of Genesis the account of the Hebrews going down into Egypt and of their life there is given. Unearthing of the Egyptian cities of Pithon and Ramses confirms this as factual.

In the sixth chapter of the Bible's book of Genesis we read the account of God destroying all life on the earth by causing a flood to occur. Archeological diggings along the Euphrates confirm a great flood occurred approximately 3,500 years BC.

God promised the Jews that he would give them their own land, the Promised Land. The account of this happening with God's assistance is recorded in the Bible's book of Joshua. Joshua pronounced a curse against anyone who tried to rebuild Jericho, Joshua

6:26. In 1st Kings 16:34 read that Hiel of Bethel tried to rebuild Jericho. His first son Abiram died when the foundations were laid while his 2nd son Sequb died when the first gate was being set up.

The prophets of the books of Amos, Leviticus, Deuteronomy, Jeremiah and Kings all prophesied that the Jews would be scattered. However, eventually God would bring them to Israel the Promised Land. They were scattered each and every time they were conquered: 1st by the Assyrians, then the Babylonians, then by Cyrus the Great, followed by the Persians, Egyptians, and Syrians-Seleucids and finally by the Romans. Throughout all of this the Jews never lost their identity, and they returned from the four corners of the world in 1948 with Hebrew being the national language. Hebrew being the national language fulfills the prophecy of Zephaniah (640-609BC) that God would give his people a pure language to call upon the Lord and serve him with in one language.

The prophets Isaiah, Jeremiah, Ezekiel, Amos and Obadiah all prophesied that Edom and the Edomites would disappear from the face of the earth. This happened in 125BC when John Hyrcanus conquered Edom.

Nahum (630BC) prophesied that Nineveh would be taken by the Babylonians. This took place in 614BC. Nahum also prophesied that the Assyrian nation would be conquered. This happened in 612BC when the Babylonians

invaded her. Isaiah (701BC) and Jeremiah (626BC) prophesied that Babylon would cease to exist. She was taken by the Persians (Chaldeans and Medes) in 539BC and by 536 the great city of Babylon was destroyed never to be rebuilt.

Habakkuk (605BC) prophesied that Babylon would conquer Judah. This prophecy was fulfilled when the Babylonians took Judah 537/536BC.

Isaiah prophesied against King Hezekiah who was defeated by the Babylonians in 597BC.

Ezekiel prophesied against King Zedekiah that he would be blinded and taken to Babylon, this happened in 586BC when Jerusalem fell to the Babylonians.

Deuteronomy's prophecy of cannibalism within the walls of Jerusalem appears to have come true when a woman known as Mary killed, roasted and ate her infant child when Jerusalem was under siege in 70AD.

How could these persons (prophets) accurately predict futuristic events? **By their own admission they tell us that their God told them.**

Part Three: World Religions:

Chapter Sixteen: Ancient and Major World Religions:

“Always in a spirit of respect for others, one also needs to develop a critical sense in the face of other religions or ways of life which people find meaningful”. *Page 556: The Catechetical Documents: A Parish Resource: Liturgy Training Publications.*

Ancient religions such as Taoism, Confucianism, Shintoism, Sikhism, Jainism, Zoroastrianism, mythology and Cults are not considered by me to be major world religions. For that reason I will only briefly examine their doctrine. Followers of early Taoism and Confucianism were more concerned with everyday life than worship, religious celebrations or pursuit of the afterlife. Shintoism’s major theme is that purity and festivity are basic values. Shintoists do not seek the grace required for salvation. Instead, a person will live in the memories and prayers of one’s descendants so long as the family name continues. The nature of Cults needs to be examined. Atheism because it is a religion of self- righteousness and the number of persons claiming to be atheists totaling around 1 billion persons also need to be examined..

A Cult:

Cults are usually a spin off from a religion. Some are very friendly places giving their members shelter and security. Others are controlling, stripping their members of their individuality, their wealth and then enslaving them. Although it is not explicitly explained, one can be quite sure that included in the minor religious group are the cults. A cult is a group of persons fanatically attracted to the teaching or doctrine of their spiritual leader, regardless of what name he or she may be known by. **The spiritual leader blends some of the doctrines of Christianity, Judaism or some other religion with their doctrine. In other words they steal part of the doctrine of other religions. This is extremely important to remember when perusing the pages of this book or when studying what minor religions have to offer.** A cult is any religious or other group which calls for absolute religious devotion to its leader. The five major traits of a cult may be as defined follows:

Authority of the Leader: The leader usually acts as jury and judge and usually refers to themselves as “Master” “Father” “Holy” or “Enlightened One”.

Control: The Leader usually tries to have complete control of the members by making all decisions.

Recruiting: To get people to join, the recruiters usually use slick and sometimes dishonest or illegal methods. They usually are

quite good at targeting people who may have some readiness to join. They seem to be able to recognize persons who are lonely and in need of friendship.

Dependence on the Cult: The members are usually isolated from their family and the general public at large, they are never left alone and confined to communal living.

Independent Thinking Is Prohibited: Employing brain washing/mind-controlling techniques the Cult leader usually tries to destroy, the ego and individual personalities of its members.

Finances: Some cult leaders demand that the members turn over all their assets to them, resulting in the individual living sometimes with just the bare necessities available within the commune, while the leader lives an extravagant life style.

Jim Jones was the leader of the People's Temple in Jonestown Guyana. You may recall that in 1978 more than 900 persons living there committed suicide by swallowing poisoned Kool-Aid. Charles Manson another cult leader was able to convince some of his followers to murder Sharon Tate and others who were unfortunate enough to be at her house at that time. David Koresh was the leader of the cult whose members including Koresh, died in the Waco Texas fire.

Hinduism:

Hinduism is a conglomerate of religious, philosophical and cultural ideas. Hinduism is the oldest and simplest of religions. Perhaps its two most famous followers were **Mohandas K. Gandhi** (1869-1948) and **Jawaharlal Nehru** (1889-1964). Hinduism has no central authority, no narrow moral code and no divine revelation. It has one god. It also has more than 300 million gods. All living things are gods. They have nature gods, family gods, tribal gods, a sun god, a wind god and a god of fire to name a few. Their one major god's name is **Brahman** and/or **Brahma** and their religious book is the book of Mahabharata. Most Hindus believe that only Brahman is real everything else is an illusion known as **Maya**. Maya being an illusion most followers of Hinduism put very little if any effort into making this world a better place to live in.

According to Hindu thinking, the problem with most people is that they are blinded by worldly illusions and therefore cannot be united with Brahman. The illusions of this world imprison them separating them from Brahman. Even death cannot end this imprisonment as life flows through countless rebirths (reincarnation). The hope of Hindus, then, is to be finally released from Maya and then to be united with Brahman. This release from Maya is possible through devotion to Krishna, a very popular god among Hindus. Union with Brahman is very difficult to

achieve, the Hindus believe that even some gods put too much focus on worldly issues causing them to die and their souls are then reincarnated to a lower life form. Vishnu is a God, the preserver of the world, whose soul descending to earth is called **avatar**. I have not been able to ascertain from what I have read on Hinduism, where the soul after death ascends to or descends from. The god Krishna is himself the eighth of nine such avatars.

Hindu thought divides all life into higher and lower forms and also divides its people into higher and lower castes. The highest caste are the Brahmins a priestly caste. The Brahmins consider themselves just a little lower than the gods. Below the Brahmins in descending order are the warriors, the merchants, the labourers and so on continuing down until one encounters the “out-castes”. The out castes are so low they are sometimes considered not part of the system. The followers of Hinduism and Buddhism both of which teach reincarnation total approximately 1.3 billion persons.

To my knowledge there is no scientific proof of reincarnation. When one stops and considers whether or not reincarnation could occur, the answer immediately becomes very clear that it could not happen. The concept of reincarnation as I understand it is that one’s soul after the death of the body is reincarnated (returns to this earth). In Hinduism the soul after leaving a dead body can return to earth and enter the body of any other animal or

plant. Examples being a human's soul depending upon their life style while on earth, may come back as a human, a snake, as a cow or any other animal. If a person lived a good and kind life their soul may come back and enter into a human of higher standing. On the other hand a person who lived a life of crime their soul may come back and be forced to enter into a plant or into a snake or some other lowly creature. I have difficulty with this concept. If a soul enters into a plant, say a strawberry and the strawberry is then eaten, what happens to the soul? If the soul of a dead person returns to earth and is forced into a snake does that then imply that the snake did not previously have a soul? If the snake had a soul does this now mean that it has two souls? If not what happened to the first soul the snake had?

In Hinduism each member of the animal family has only one soul which lives forever, this then means that the total number of the animal kingdom world wide could not increase. This is not the case, the number of human beings world wide is steadily increasing and to feed the growing human population the number of domestic animals being grown for food is also increasing.

Buddhism:

Who in today's world has not seen on television the yellow robed monks of Buddhism? Just as Protestantism is the

offshoot of Catholicism, Buddhism is an offshoot of Hinduism.

Buddhism teaches a system of human conduct based primarily on rationality. It has two schools of doctrine Hinayana and Mahayana. Hinayana, the lesser vehicle's (sects) followers are called Theravadas and believe personal example exalts salvation and rely heavily on the teaching of the elders. The followers of greater vehicle (sects) Mahayana the monks, believe salvation is attained by good works and faith in the teaching of Buddha. Buddha accepted many thoughts from Hinduism including reincarnation. Buddhism's theme is that life is only a temporary vessel of a body. Its emotions, its thoughts, its tendencies and knowledge are meant to break the cycle of death and birth.

Siddhartha Gautama (563-483BC) born near Kapilavasta in what is now Nepal was the founder of Buddhism and became known as the "Buddha". This title means "the enlightened one". Gautama's in his first known sermon put forward four truths that lead to "nirvana", full enlightenment. They are: the First Noble truth is sorrow: birth, our earthly existence leads to disease, pain and suffering, grief and death. The Second Noble truth is: the origin of sorrow: seeking pleasure (greed) is the origin of sorrow. The Third Noble Truth is: the complete cessation sorrow. The complete abandonment of greed releases one from the Second Noble Truth. The Fourth Noble Truth is: the path to

cessation of sorrow. Within the Fourth Noble Truth there are eight rights. These “rights” are: understanding, thought, speech, action, livelihood, effort, mindfulness and concentration. Monks try to live the above rights and thereby achieve nirvana.

The Two Faces of Islam:

I do not want to be judgmental or appear to be critical or a racist; however I strongly feel that Islam and Atheism in addition to their doctrine warrants additional comments.

I have read Adullah Yusufali’s Arabic to English translation of the Qur’an. I have also compared his translation to Al Buhkari and Skakir’s translations. There are only minor variances. Of these three, Adullah Yusufali’s translation is respected world wide and considered to be one of the most correct translations of the Qur’an from Arabic to English.

Muslim Clerics would have us believe Islam is a peaceful religion. I have found the opposite to be true. I strongly suggest that you do not accept my word on what is contained within the pages of the Qur’an and the doctrine of Islam, rather I suggest you obtain an Arabic to English translation, read it and draw your own conclusion from what you read. This can be accomplished by Googling Adullah Yusufali and go to his Arabic to English translation.

Attached to the Qur'an are Hadiths, Sunni and Sharia law. I am not prepared to debate Sunni or Sharia law however, Hadiths demand explanation. There are thousand upon thousands of Hadiths (or Hadeths or Hadeeths) attached to the Qur'an. A Hadith can best be described as claims made by individuals, stating that they heard the prophet Muhammad say certain things and/or they are written commentaries on the Qur'anic verses. There are least forty three (43) books containing Hadiths. Within these books, to mention a few, there are in addition to the introduction and epilogues 7,190 Hadiths by Sahih Muslin, 4,800 Hadiths by Adu Dawud and at least 34 volumes contain 7,800 pages by Tahari.

Islam means submission. The Qur'an or Koran is the book of Islam. The Qur'an is said to be the word of Allah, the Muslim's God, given to his one and only prophet Muhammad. Muhammad was born in Mecca which is now in Saudi Arabia in 570AD. He was the son of a member of the wealthy Quarish clan. Being persecuted in 622AD Muhammad fled Mecca to Yathrib which is now Medina. Muhammad's first wife was A'ishah, and according to Adu Dawud, (one of the Hadith writers) Muhammad married her when she was 6 or 7 years old and the marriage was consummated when A'ishah was nine (9) years old. (In today's world, this would be considered child molestation). Muhammad died June 8, 632AD. We know the Qur'an was compiled in part during the

reign of Caliph Uthman (644-656AD). Fearing that Muhammad's words would be lost, they were written on pieces of leather, pieces of wood, stones or any other material available and given by the authors of these collections of writings to Caliph Uthman. In 656AD before completing the collection into one volume, Caliph Uthman, who was the secretary of Muhammad, was assassinated. It is unclear who actually finished writing the Qur'an. Even though the book was not completed until at least 24 years after Muhammad's death, Muslims believe it to be the absolute true word of their God Allah.

Muslims, who number about 1.3 billion world wide, argue that their God Allah was the creationist and Muhammad was a self proclaimed prophet through whom his God Allah chose to speak. Compiled from literature written on pieces of leather, wood, stone or any other material, the Qur'an or Koran is repudiated to be the word of Allah. The Koran was written in Arabic and is not arranged in chronological order but by the length of its chapters known as Surah's or Suras. In the Qur'an the longest Surahs are presented first with the shortest bringing up the rear. Within the Qur'an there are many similarities to events within the Hebrew/Jewish Torah and the Christian Bible. Many Qur'anic characters are given the same names as those persons named in the Torah and the Bible. There are at least twenty five (25) named. They include Adam, David,

Jonah, Ezekiel, Moses, Noah, Mary and Jesus. **Many of the twenty five Biblical characters named in the Qur'an are referred to as prophets. However, in many places the statement is made that Muhammad is the one and only true messenger of Allah. This statement is another way of saying that Moses and the other Biblical prophets mentioned are false prophets.** Within Islam, Muslims hold the Biblical Joshua in very high esteem account of his tremendously successful military campaigns.

You may have heard someone mention or read that there are five pillars within Islam. I do not care to elaborate on them other than to offer what follows:

The Creed: “There is no deity except Allah; Muhammad is the messenger of Allah”.

Prayer: Muslims are called to prayer five times per day and conduct the necessary five elements to purify their bodies for prayer.

Pray must include the “chant”.

Fasting: During the ninth month of their calendar “Ramadan” fasting from sunup to sunset is mandatory. Fasting includes abstaining from sexual intercourse.

Poor-due: Muslims are supposed to give 2.5 percent of their annual income to charity.

The Pilgrimage: If financially able a Muslim is to make at least one pilgrimage to Mecca during their life time.

Within Islam, the one and only God Allah chose's who will be allowed to enter his heaven. It is His choice and His choice only.

The Surahs stating this fact are Surah: 10:100, Surah: 29:21 and Surah: 48:14.

This is contrary to the Christian belief. Christians believe based on what is presented in their Bible that their God calls everyone and those who answer his call and accept Jesus as their savior will after their death enter and remain forever in God's Heaven.

Surah: 43:19 states that there are female angels and strongly suggests that they have intercourse with Allah.

The Qur'an among other things is a book of contradictions. I will present only one such contradiction, the one dealing with the creation of man. The following according to the Qur'anic verses is what man was made from. Surah; 15:26-28 from mud; Surah 16:4 from a single sperm; Surah 17:61 from clay; Surah 21:30 from water; Surah 21:56 from nothing; Surah 23:14 from a drop of blood; Surah 40:67 from a leech; Surah 49:13 from a single pair and Surah 70:19 from base material.

Within the Qur'an, as translated by Adullah Yusufali and the Hadiths attached to it, there are a number of verses that are rather troubling. There are at least ninety one (91) verses in the Qur'an and at least fifteen (15) Hadiths condoning killing and fighting. If you are a Muslim and leave the faith and cannot be convinced to return you must be killed. If

you cannot be converted to Islam you must be killed. A Muslim must not kill another Muslim. If a Muslim should accidentally kill another Muslim compensation must be paid to the dead person's family. On the other hand, there are rewards for killing an infidel (a non Muslim).

There are thirty one (31) Surahs and at least three (3) Hadiths belittling women. **A woman if assaulted or raped must provide four (4) eye witnesses to the event who are willing to testify on her behalf, before her attacker can be convicted.** When out in public women must be covered, except for their eyes hands and feet (in some countries women are allowed to have their faces showing). When out in public she must have her father or her husband's permission to do so and must be accompanied by other persons. **It is okay to beat a woman provided you don't beat her around the eyes.** A man can divorce his wife via a telephone conversation (in Muhammad's time there were no telephones). A man can temporarily divorce his wife when she is menstruating so that he may legally have sex with another woman. Women are worth only ½ of what a man is worth. If a man dies and has surviving him a girl and boy child, the boy is to receive twice as much inheritance as the girl with the mother being left to the mercy of her children, relatives or other generous persons. A woman must walk at least three steps behind a man. A woman is not allowed to pray while she is menstruating.

If a man sits within the four corners of a woman and has sex with her, bath for the man is mandatory. This statement would seem to indicate that according to Islam a man is purer than a woman or at the very least that a woman is dirty. I have not been able to determine what the four corners of a woman might be.

Within the Qur'an there are at least thirty four (34) hate fear mongering verses. An example would be a Muslim who refuses to fight in Allah's cause cannot enter heaven. Heaven is a beautiful place under which a river flows and where one (presumably men) has access to perpetual virgins.

Muslims are not to befriend Christians or Jews.

The Qur'an must be recited (recited not studied) in Arabic, an obvious attempt to make Arabic the universal language.

One often hears on radio and television and also reads in the press that Islam is a religion of love and peace. I have found this to be completely the opposite. After much deliberation and thought the decision was made to present a few of the many Qur'anic verses and also some examples of Haidths that should be of concern to the reader and to all peace loving persons.

From the Qur'an:

Surah 5:51: Do not take Christians or Jews as your friends.

Surah 60:1: You are also forbidden to befriend any non believer.

Surah 2:193: And fight them on until there is no more Tumult or oppression, and there prevail justice and faith in Allah.

Surah 2:216: “Fighting is prescribed for you”

Surah: 2:256: “Whosoever changes his religion kill him”.

A partial listing of other Qur’anic verses **condoning** fighting, murder, wife beating and dictating that Christians, Jews and all other non believers are to be shunned are:
Surah 1:74-76, Surah 1:84, Surah 2:244, Surah 3:13, Surah 3:141-143, Surah 3:169-172, Surah 4:74-77, Surah 4:84, Surah 4:89, Surah 4:95-97, Surah 4:101-102, Surah 4:157, Surah 4:160, Surah 4:171-172, Surah 5:14, Surah 5:17, Surah 5:20-24, Surah 5:41, Surah 5:41-46, Surah 5:51, Surah 5:54, Surah 5:64, Surah 5:70-78, Surah 5:109-117, Surah 6:83-106, Surah 7:4-5, Surah 7:16-18, Surah 7:27, Surah 7:40, Surah 7:73, Surah 8:30, Surah 8:38, Surah 8:50, Surah 9:31, Surah 8:12, Surah 8:14-17, Surah 8:39, Surah 8:41, Surah 8:60, Surah 8:65, Surah 8:72, Surah 8:74, Surah 9:5, Surah 9:14, Surah 9:20, Surah 9:29, Surah 9:31, Surah 9:38-39, Surah 9:41, Surah 9:44, Surah 9:49-52, Surah 9:81, Surah 9:83, Surah 9:88, Surah 9:90, Surah 9:123,

Surah 10:26-28, Surah 10:99-100, Surah 12:10-22, Surah 36:17-18, Surah 47:14, Surah 48:15-23, Surah 57:10, Surah 61:4, Surah 61:11, Surah 62:6, Surah 62:10, Surah 69:44-47, Surah 73:20.

And from the Hadiths:

Volume 1, Book 1, Number 6: Narrated Abdullah bin Abbas

“Just Issue orders to kill every Jew present in the country.”

Volume 1, Book 2, Number 24: Narrated Ibn 'Umar:

Allah's Apostle said: **"I have been ordered (by Allah) to fight against the people** until they testify that none has the right to be worshipped but Allah and that Muhammad is Allah's Apostle, and offer the prayers perfectly and give the obligatory charity, so if they perform all that, then they save their lives and property from me except for Islamic laws and then their reckoning (accounts) will be done by Allah."

Volume 1, Book 3, Number 85: Narrated Abu Huraira:

The Prophet said, "(Religious) knowledge will be taken away (by the death of religious scholars) ignorance (in religion) and afflictions will appear; and Harj will increase." It was asked, "What is Harj, O Allah's Apostle?" **He replied by beckoning with his hand indicating "killing."** (Fateh-al-Bari Page 192, Vol. 1)

"Fight against people until they say there is no God but Allah", abrogated an earlier tradition. *Abu Dawud* vol.2 no.3188 p.908

Anyone who kills an infidel is guaranteed Paradise. *Abu Dawud* vol.2 no.2489 p.690. See also *Abu Dawud* vol.2 footnote 1843 p.691

Fighting with Jews and Christians carries more reward than fighting others. *Abu Dawud* vol.2 no.2482 footnote 1831 p.688

A wife has a right not to be struck on her face: *Abu Dawud* vol.2 no.2137 p.574.

Do not revile a wife or beat her on her face: *Abu Dawud* vol.2 no.2138-2139 p.574-575.

Muhammad never criticized sexually molesting captives or slaves that a man owns: *Buhkari* 3:34 vol 5 book 59.

Other fighting and killing verses from The Hadiths are: Number 1:25 and 1:35 narrated by Abu Huraira; Volume 1:25 narrated by Al Bukhari; Volume 1 Book 1 Number 6 narrated by Abdullah bin Abbas; Volume 1 Book 2 Number 24 narrated by Ibn Umar; Volume 3, book 46 Number 694 narrated by Abu Dhar.; Volume 1 Book 3 Number 85 narrated by Abu Huraira; Volume 1 Book 3 Number 111 narrated by Ash-sha'bi; Volume

1 Book 3 Number 122 narrated by Jarir; Volume 1 Book 3 number 122 narrated by Ubai bin Ka'd; Volume 1 Book 3 Number 125 narrated by Abu Musa; Volume 1 Book 4 Number 234 narrated by Abu Qilaba; Volume 3 Book 46 Number 694 narrated by Abu Dhar. Volume 4:196 narrated by Al Bukhari; Volume 9:57 narrated by Al Bukhari. And there are many many more.

A partial listing of Qur'anic verses **rewarding** fighting and killing are as follows:

Surah 2:212, Surah 2:218, Surah 3:169-172, Surah 4:74, Surah 4:77, Surah 4:95-97, Surah 4:100, Surah 4:122, Surah 4:124, Surah 8:60, Surah 8:72, Surah 8:74, Surah 9:20, Surah 9:38-39, Surah 9:44, Surah 9:49-52, Surah 9:72, Surah 9:88-89, Surah 9:118, Surah 9:120 and Surah 13:29.

Again please do not accept my presentation, obtain a copy of Arabic to English translation of the Qur'an and the Hadiths study them and draw your own conclusions.

Atheism:

Another group consisting of atheists, agnostic, and secular /non religious persons totalling 1.1 billion most of whom live in China argue that there is no God and the universe and everything within it happened purely by chance. It is this writer's opinion that there is no such thing as an atheist and

these people should be referred to as agnostic. The statements “God does not exist” or “that there is no God” in my opinion are absolute statements and absolute statements must be capable of being proven. To my knowledge no one has ever proven God does not exist. I would like to put forward a few examples of persons who are self proclaimed atheists and their arguments that God does not exist and whether or not their arguments can withstand the test of time.

Baron d’Holbach (1772) (www.Barond’Holbach) stated: “All children are born atheists; they have no idea of God”. How could Baron d’Holbach make the above statement and expect anyone to believe it? A new born child has not yet learned a language and therefore cannot express their thoughts and for this reason we do not know whether or not they have any knowledge of a god or gods.

George H. Smith (1979) (www.George H. Smith) suggests that: “The man who is unacquainted with theism is an atheist because he does not believe in a god”. This statement is false. There is strong archaeological evidence that man back as far as 100,000 years ago were holding religious ceremonies. We also know that the Mayans, the North American Indians prior to the discovery of the Americas held a belief in Gods and more recently we have found that Australian pigmy tribes believe in a god or gods.

Dawkins, a world renowned biologist at Oxford and a self proclaimed atheist, puts forward in his book “The God Delusion” a number of theories why God does not exist. He is very high on natural selection, puts forth the 747 theory, and the Meme theory to name a few.

The 747 theory was probably first penned by Fred Hoyle. Dawkins writes on page 113 of his book “The God Delusion” as follows: *“Hoyle said that the probability of life originating on this earth is no greater than the chance of a hurricane, sweeping through a scrap yard, would have the luck to assemble a Boeing 747. Others have borrowed the metaphor to refer to the later evolution of complex living bodies, where it has a spurious plausibility. The odds against assembling a fully functional horse, beetle or ostrich by randomly shuffling its parts are up there in 747 territory. This in a nutshell, is the creationist’s favourite argument. The creationist misappropriation of the argument from improbability always takes the same general form, and it doesn’t make any difference if the creationist chooses to masquerade in the politically expedient fancy dress of intelligent design”*. I ask the question: could not the same argument be put forward regarding natural selection?

The word meme is a shortening of mimeme from ancient Greek. The word meme was coined by Richard Dawkins who wanted

it to sound something like gene. My understanding of a meme is that it is an idea, behaviour or style that spreads from person to person within a culture. Supporters of the concept of memes as cultural analogues to genes in that they self-replicate mutate and respond to selective pressures. Memes spread through the behaviours they generate in their hosts minds. They may evolve by natural selection, through the processes of inheritance, variation, mutation, competition or any other source that may influence their being.

Dawkins, within the pages of his book, viciously attacks God and North American Christians and North American religions into which he has obviously grouped the cults. Dawkins compares North American Christians to the Afghan Taliban. One wonders with Dawkins living in England why the attack is against North American Christians rather than European Christians or Christians at large? One also cannot help but wonder why one feels compelled to attack God, after all according to Dawkins, by his own admission God does not exist.

Dawkins claims there is no God. Then please explain to us why you are compelled to so viciously attack something that does not exist. On page 31 we read "*The God of the Old Testament is arguably the most unpleasant character in all fiction: jealous and proud of it, a petty unjust unforgiving control freak: a vindictive blood thirsty ethnic*

cleanser; a misogynistic, homophobic, racist, infanticidal, genocidal, filicidal, pestilential, megalomaniacal, sadomasochistic, and capriciously malevolent bully; cruel, vindictive, capricious and unjust". And again on page 37 "fiercely unpleasant, morbidly obsessed with sexual restrictions, with the smell of charred flesh, and with his own superiority over rival gods" and concludes by calling God "an ogre".

Dawkins on page 37 states; "*Christianity was founded by Paul of Tarsus*". Here again he is wrong. Jesus Christ was the founder of Christianity and after his death his first successor was Peter who died around 67AD.

Another self proclaimed atheist is Christopher Hitchens who like Dawkins has written a book proclaiming that God does not exist. The title is "God is not great: How religion poisons everything". I find his given name to be quite interesting: **CHRIST**opher. On page 85 of his book Hitchens suggests that God is clumsy, incompetent and is a failure. He makes this claim after examining the eye that can be blinded, the ear that can go deaf and when viewed from behind looks funny, our appendix that we do not need, our easily worn out knees and a needless coat of hair. *(Author's note; Researching the Bible and other publications did not provide any evidence that God originally made any other human parts other than those of his creation those first two humans Adam and Eve. I have*

been unable to find any evidence that these originals were not made perfect by God.)

On page 116 Hitchens quotes The Bible's New Testament book of Matthew 13:55-57 (Jesus' brothers and sisters) and asks the question how could Mary have a large brood of children from a man "*who exists only in reported speech*". The Greek words used in the above biblical verses adelphas and alpelphi are also used to indicate nephew, niece, half brothers and half sisters and cousins. Early eastern apocryphal writers claim that Joseph at about forty years of age married a woman called Salome, sometimes also referred to as Melcha or Escha. They were married for some forty nine years prior to her death. The brothers and sisters alluded to by Matthew refers to Joseph and Salome's children. Joseph was 90 years old when he was approached by God to take Mary as his wife and in all probability was unable to consummate the marriage thus ensuring a virgin birth. According to these writers he was 92 years old when Jesus was born and since he is not mentioned after the temple incident when he would have been 104 years old it is presumed that he had passed away.

On page 117 Hitchens states "*the sun standing still so Joshua can complete his massacre at a site that has never been located*". This statement is not true. Here he is obviously referring to Gibeon. You will recall that Gibeon an ancient Canaanite city was unearthed between 1956 and 1962.

Gibeon is mentioned in the Bible as follows: Joshua 10:2, 1st Samuel 7:1, and 2nd Samuel 2:12, 2nd Chronicles 7:12 and Habakkuk 3:11.

Both Dawkins and Hitchens are quick to point out that religion kills and both comment on the religious wars fought. Examples being the Muslim campaigns to conquer the world and their actions in the Strait of Gibraltar in the 16 century, the slaughter of non Arab Muslims in Dufar, the Crusades, the Hindu cast system, the treatment of American slaves, the shelling of Sarajevo, the child soldiers of northern Uganda to name a few. What I failed to find in their work is the fact that Lenin and Stalin were responsible for an estimated 35 million deaths, Mao for an estimated 78 million deaths and Hitler responsible for an estimated 12 million deaths of which 6 million were Christians and 6 million were Jews (also see the chapter Christian persecution). The above regimes were then responsible for 125 million of the estimated 160 million deaths caused by the so called religious and ethnic cleansing wars. **Lenin, Stalin, Mao and Hitler professed to be atheists.**

Perhaps too much effort has been devoted to atheism. However, before moving on it needs to be said that Hitchens and to some extent Dawkins suggest to us that religion is man made. Dawkins and Hitchen's religion that they refer to is the doctrine of the churches or of the cults and of course some of it is of man. Being man made they suggest

that some of the doctrine is stupid, borders on insanity, promotes abuse and sexual abuse, mutilation and hinders modern medicine's attempts to eradicate some diseases. **Here I am sure that they have grouped all, including the cults under the umbrella of religion and here they are right. We need to ask ourselves why this has happened and why we continue to allow it to happen.**

Other notable atheists who can be Googled to name a few are: Sigmund Freud, Karl Marx, Ludwig Feuerbach, Friedrich Engels and Mikhail Bakunin.

(Authors note: Christopher Hitchens passed away just before Christmas 2011 and for obvious reasons cannot now defend his position).

At least two others writers comment on Gibeon. They are world renowned Stephen Hawking who was Professor of Mathematics at Cambridge University and Leonard Mlodinow a Physicist at Caltech. In their book *The Grand Design* on page 87 they comment on the sun standing still for a day so that Joshua could complete his military operation of taking Gibeon. They state for this to happen the earth would have stopped in its rotation and that is impossible because according to Newton's law everything not tied down would have continued in motion and at the earth's equator that is approximately 1,100 miles per hour. The Biblical writers in Joshua, and Sirach, the

author of The Book of Jashar and the author of the Book of Enoch all clearly state that both the sun and the moon stood still. How could this be that both the sun and the moon stood still? It defies all known laws however; this event has been recorded by at least three different writers. If this event causing the sun and the moon to stand still for a day was the result of God, how did he accomplish it? What laws or mathematical formula was used? Perhaps it shall remain a mystery forever.

There is another biblical account of the sun being stopped or reversed. It is recorded in 2nd Kings Chapter 20 verses 1-11 and Isaiah Chapter 38 verse 8. The account is that King Hezekiah was mortally ill with boils. God instructed Isaiah to cure Hezekiah by making a fig poultice and to place it on the boils. The doubting King Hezekiah wanted proof that this was from God. God then caused the sun's shadow on the steps at Ahaz to move backwards ten steps. This then appears to be an opportune place to discuss Hawkings and Mlodinow's views on the origin of the universe.

The title of their book "The Grand Design" and other comments they make suggests that they believe the universe originated from nothing. After reviewing theories put forward by great thinkers starting with Aristotle and continuing on to the present they put forward a number of theories suggesting that perhaps the universe can

function without Divine intervention. I have read and re-read their book; some chapters more than twice and do still not know their final position on creation verses The Big Bang Theory. At least four of the great thinkers' ideas they examined believed in a creator. They are Newton, Galileo, Kepler and Einstein. They examined the laws of nature, the laws of the universe, nuclear laws, laws of science, physical laws and the law of gravity and what light is composed of. They offer what antimatter is, the Heisenberg uncertainty principle, a meson, a quark and an anti-quark, a buckyball, a planck size, a multiverse, a supersymmetry, a strong nuclear force/weak nuclear force, microwaves, binary orbits, eccentricities orbits, the big bang theory, quantum theory and the M-theory. Shamefully and reluctantly I must confess that I do not comprehend much of what they put forward, however, I would like to address The Big Bang Theory, a multiverse and the M-theory.

Hawking and Mlodinow, you and I and countless numbers of persons before us and those coming after us, have looked up or will look up and ask the basic questions. How, why, where and when and from what did the universe begin. If we ask the question regarding the origin whether by creation or by chance and if we could trace them backward in infinity would we eventually find something beginning from nothing? For now that question remains unanswered.

The laws of the universe strongly support something is holding it all together. An example being: our orbit around our sun is eccentricity almost a perfect circle. In grade school I was taught the distance between our earth and the sun was 93 million miles. We now know that the closest we come to the sun is approximately 91.5 million miles and when we are farthest away we are approximately 94.5 miles from it. The fact that the earth is tilted on its axis allows for the seasons we experience. A slight variation in the path of our orbit around the sun would cause our oceans to boil when nearest to the sun and for them to freeze over when we are away from it. This of course would not promote life as we now know it here on earth.

I should now like to put forward as I understand it Hawking's and Mlodinow's thoughts on how and when we might have begun.

The following is one of many theories put forward in their book. As I understand it they suggest that The Big Bang Theory may not have been a big bang at all. They suggest that just prior to the explosion; the size of the universe at that time may have been very tiny perhaps as small as, a billion-trillion-trillionth of a centimetre. In other words almost nothing to small to be measured. They do not offer what matter or material it may have been. They suggest the center of it would be very hot perhaps 100,000 degrees Kelvin. They do not offer any suggestion as to what fuse

would have triggering the explosion, instead offering within the first .00000000000000000000000000000000000001 of a second it would have expanded 1,000,000,000,000,000,000,000,000,000,000 times its original size. They compare this expansion to coin one centimetre in size becoming the size of our Milky Way in 200 seconds. Elements remaining after the explosion would be approximately 73 % hydrogen and 23 % helium with a trace of lithium. You will notice the absence of carbon and oxygen essential for life as we know it. They claim these elements are created from stars exploding. They claim stars may have originated from multiverses.

They define a multiverse as a quantum fluctuation leading to tiny universes out of nothing. Although we cannot see them because their origin is from nothing we are asked to think of a pot of boiling water. The heat rising up through the water creates bubbles some are very small and burst almost as soon as they break the surface. Others continue to form and become quite large before they burst (explode). So it is with multiverses. A few expand forming stars and galaxies and universes. They state universes instead of the single universe because over the past billion of years many multiverses may have formed and created other universes still unknown to us. Some of the earliest stars formed have billions of years ago died and exploded. The result of a star dying and then exploding generates the elements necessary to

form planets. In our case those elements include carbon, hydrogen and oxygen.

M-theory according to Hawking and Mlodinow is the theory that ties everything in the universe together. Their definition for it is as follows; “a fundamental theory of physics that is a candidate for the theory of everything”. That is exactly what The Big Bang, multiverses and the M-theory are they are yet unproven theories.

Part Three: Summary and Conclusions:

My conclusion is the arguments presented by minor religions, cults, Hinduism, Buddhism, the doctrine of Islam or Atheism suggesting that a Supreme Being (God) exists or does not exist are at the very least weak and shallow. This statement is made based on the following:

The major theme of Taoism, Confucianism and Sikhism is purities. The followers of these religions do not seek or pursue an after life existence.

Cults are generally controlling with the leader living off the benefits of the followers who usually live communal life styles.

The followers of Hinduism believe there are billions of gods and that the soul is reincarnated again and again.

The followers of Buddhism believe a personal example exalts salvation and also believe in the soul being reincarnated.

The followers of Islam believe in Allah their God and that heaven exists. Within their Holy Book the Qur'an there are verses pertaining to charity and love, however it is primarily a book of contradiction, of hate, fear mongering, killing and of belittling women.

The followers of Atheism claim there is no god however the arguments they put forward are at the very least weak and do not support the statement.

The trigger in The Big Bang if it did occur remains unknown. It could have been the force, The Creator, Christians have called God. If multiverses do in fact exist, or existed in the distance past, their origin could have been generated by God. We just simply do not know.

“The fool says in his heart, there is no God”: Psalm 52 verse 1 (NIV).

Conclusions Drawn from My Research:

World religions examined excluding Christianity and Judaism do not offer any plausible explanation for the origin of the universe or the existence of a Supreme Being.

The theories offered by some Atheists regarding the origin of the universe and whether or not God exists are not valid and will not stand up to scrutiny. Instead they chose to vehemently criticize Christians and God, who by their own admission does not exist.

Some theories and laws postulated by the great minds of physicists, astronomers, nuclear scientist, philosophers and mathematicians are widely accepted. A few in the above group, such as Newton, Galileo, Kepler and Einstein believe something (God) is responsible for creation. Others suggest that the universe can function quite well on its own and offer “The Big Bank Theory” as the beginning of our universe. My understanding of any explosion is there must be a trigger. To my knowledge no one has offered what triggered “The Big Bang”. Could it have been the Creator? Accordingly they offer our universe and other universes yet undiscovered grew from Multiverses. They only theorize this and for that reason one could also theorize that the creator’s hand was involved in both. However, when the Biblical creation story and Biblical history is examined there

appears to be over whelming evidence that some one or something has had a hand in creation and is still involved today. This statement is supported by the following.

Without something or someone (God) intervening, what explanation can be offered to explain the unusual experiences of my wife and I, of Professor Clifford and his wife Charlotte C., of Caleb Teodorescu, of Tony K. and his wife Rose, of George C. and his family, of Colton Burpo, Alex Malarkey and of Lilliane and Michael.

Fr. Coughill, Billy Graham, E. Lonnie Melashenko and Brian Jones provide us with an additional 70 stories of persons who have had similar experiences that just simple cannot be explained by conventional means.

Medical Dr. Raymond A. Moody in his book "Life after Life" has interviewed and recorded the stories of 150 persons declared clinically dead and then were revived. Almost all of them tell of meeting God (Jesus). Dr. Moody's book is only one of many, many such books of unusual, not readily explained personal experiences.

Over the years there have been many thousands of intellects who believe or did believe in a Supreme Being (God) I chose to present the comments of only 24 from various vocations.

The life and times of Jesus Christ fulfilled at least 44 of the 50 Old Testament prophecies pertaining to him that were made hundreds of years prior to his birth.

According to the Biblical writers Jesus prior to His death made a number of prophecies of futuristic events that were historically known to have happened. They are:

The temple in Jerusalem would be destroyed it would be taken down stone by stone.

There would be an increase in the frequency of major earthquakes and famines.

False prophets and persons claiming to be the Messiah would follow his death.

No one can predict the end of our time. And Christians would suffer and be persecuted.

The instinct that birds and animal have has to originate from something. Could it come from God?

The writer of the eighth chapter of the Bible's book of Psalms written more than 3,000 years ago knew the ocean and seas have currents.

The Biblical prophet and writer Job who lived 2,500 years ago knew our baby teeth when they first cut through our gums have skin. He also knew and understood fertilization and development of a fetus.

The Biblical writer and prophet Isaiah describes God stretching out the heavens, perhaps a reference to “The Big Bang Theory”.

The Biblical creation story appears to be harmonious with the scientific community’s theories and geological eras, except when man first appeared.

The Bible the Christian Holy book has endured for thousand of years and artefacts uncovered at various archaeological dig sites solidify it as an historical document.

Enoch who lived approximately 5,000 years ago knew the sun moves. The writer of the 103rd Psalm who also lived approximately 3,000 years ago and the Biblical prophet Isaiah who lived until at least until 681BC knew the earth was round. The Biblical writer and Prophet Job wrote that our earth was suspended in space.

The authors of the Biblical books of Deuteronomy, 2nd Peter, Luke and Matthew understood that eventually our earth is going to be destroyed by fire.

Archaeological evidence at various sites in what is modern day Iraq along the Euphrates River supports that a great flood occurred at approximately the same time as the Biblical flood of Noah’s time.

The prophets Jeremiah, Ezekiel, Isaiah, Daniel, Joel and Amos all prophesied to the Hebrews (Jews) to change their way of life or receive God's wrath. The Biblical account is that God speaking through his prophets would bring the Assyrians and then the Babylonians against them if they didn't return to Him. They would be conquered and dispersed. They didn't and they were.

Isaiah's prophecies to King Hezekiah, if the Hebrews continued their life style and not return to God, he God would bring the Babylonians against them and many of Hezekiah's descendents would be taken captive to Babylon. Also King Zedekiah was told he would be taken captive to Babylon but would not see it. When Israel fell to the Babylonians Zedekiah was blinded and along with many of his subjects taken into slavery in Babylon.

The prophet Amos lived until at least 721BC. He along with prophets Isaiah, Jeremiah, Ezekiel and Obadiah all prophesied that Edom and the Edomites would disappear from the face of the earth. This happened in 132BC when John Hyrcanus conquered their nation.

The prophet Nahum in 630BC prophesied Assyria would disappear. In 612BC the Medes, Babylonians and Scythians took Nineveh and within a few years the Assyrian empire disappeared.

The prophet Isaiah prior to 681BC prophesied Babylon would disappear. This happened in 539 when the Persians (Medes, Ararats, Minnis, and Ashkenays) took Babylon.

The writer of the book of Deuteronomy of 1st and 2nd Kings, the prophets Isaiah and Jeremiah prophesied as follows: Israel would be taken by Assyria, Assyria would be taken by the Babylonians, the Babylonians would be taken by the Persians, the Persians would be taken by Medes, and the Medes would be taken by Syria, Syria by Egypt, Egypt by Greece and Greece by Rome and eventually the Jews will return to their homeland. Historically we know that the above sequence of events happened. The final prophecy was full filled in 1948 when Israel again became a nation with Hebrew being the mother tongue.

If the foregoing has not convinced you of the existence of a Supreme Being consider the following. The Biblical writers tell us Jesus had an inner group of 12 men, His disciples. All twelve after the death of Jesus endured almost unbelievable persecution and torture, historically we know that 10 of them choose death rather than deny Jesus. Why would they do this? To save their lives all they would have had to do is deny that Jesus was the Son of God. Additionally we are told the number of immediate followers of Jesus totalled 72 men and women and from the Bible we are told that the resurrected Jesus appeared to them and also approximately 500 other

persons. We are not told how many of these persons choose to die rather than deny Jesus. However, with the Christian persecution that took place in the formative years after Jesus' death an assumption can be made that many of these 572 persons choose death. The Roman citizen Saul who became Paul after encountering the risen Jesus was also martyred. Why would they choose to lose their lives rather than to deny God? One can only conclude that they were convinced they had seen the resurrected Jesus, and understood he was who he said he was, the Son of God.

Part Four: Christology Prophesied in the Bible:

Chapter Seventeen: Biblical Prophecies and Statements regarding Jesus:

Extrapolated from the Bible the following is a partial listing of prophecies and statements regarding the man called Jesus. They give us every aspect of who he is his genealogy, where he would be born, where he would live, his ministry and miracles performed his trial and death on a cross and his resurrection by the power of God from the dead. The Old Testament prophecies are listed first followed by those from the New Testament. The book of the Bible, the chapter and verse or verses is given. Thus Psalms 22:10 should be read as The Old Testament, the book of Psalms, chapter 22 verse 10.

JESUS EXISTED BEFORE OR AT CREATION: Psalms 22:10, Micah 5:2, John 8:58, Luke 24:27, 2 Timothy 1:9, Hebrews 1:10, John 1:1-4, 1st Peter 1:20, Colossians 1-17.

JESUS IS THE SON OF GOD: IS GOD: Psalms 2:7, Psalms 72:1, 2 Samuel 7:14, 1st Chronicles 17:13, Proverbs 30:2-4, Matthew 3:17, Matthew 16:16, Matthew 17:5, Matthew 20:31, Mark 1:1, Luke 1:35, Luke 24:27, John 1:1-2, John 1:18, John 1:34-50, John 3:16-18, John 5:17, John 5:25, John 8:27-29, John 17:11-22, John

20:17-23, John 20:31, Acts 13:33, Hebrews 1:5-8, Hebrews 4:12-14, Romans, 1:3-4, Philippians 2:5-11, 1st John 1:3-7, 1st John 3:8, 1st John 4:10-15, Titus 2:13, Revelations 1:5-6. Wisdom 2:18.

JESUS HAS THE WISDOM OF GOD: Psalms 18:30, Proverbs 8:22-30, Matthew 11:19, Luke 11:49, Luke 24:27, 1st Corinthians 1:24. Wisdom 2:13.

JESUS IS THE WORD OF GOD: Genesis 15:1-4, 1st Samuel 3:1-2, 2nd Samuel 7:14, 1st Kings 17:8-24, Psalms 18:30, Psalms 33:6, Psalms 107:20-21, Psalms 147:15-20, Isaiah 40:8-9, Isaiah 55:11, Jeremiah 25:1-4, Micah 4:2, Luke 1:2, Luke 24:27, John 1:1-4, John 3:34, Ephesians 5:26, Hebrews 4:12, Hebrews 11:3, James 1:18, 1st Peter 2:1-7, 2nd Peter 3:1-7, Revelations 19:13.

JESUS IS THE LAMB OF GOD: Genesis 22:8, Isaiah 53:7, Luke 24:27, John 1:29, John 1:36, Acts 8:32-35, 1st Peter 1:18-19, Revelations 5:6-13, Revelations 13:8, Revelations 15:3, Revelations 21:22, Revelations 22:1, Revelations 22:3.

JESUS IS THE GOD OF ISRAEL: Exodus 24:10, Judges 11:23, Judges 11:27, 1st Samuel 5:10-11, 1st Chronicles 17:24, Psalms 41:13, Isaiah 45:3, Ezekiel 8:4, Matthew 15:31, Luke 24:27, Acts 3:13.

JESUS IS THE MESSIAH, THE CHRIST, KING OF ISRAEL: 2nd Samuel 7:12,

**Psalms 2:2, Psalms 2:6, Psalms 45:1,
Psalms 45:6, Psalms 72:1, Psalms 89:37-38,
Isaiah 61:1, Daniel 9:26, Matthew 2:2-4,
Matthew 16:16, Matthew 23:2, Luke 24:27,
Acts 4:26-27, John 1:41-49, John 18:33-37.**

**JESUS IS THE ANNOINTED ONE, THE
HOLY ONE: Deuteronomy 33:8, 2nd Kings
19:22, Job 6:10, Psalms 2:2, Psalms 16:10,
Psalms 89:19, Psalms 89:38, Proverbs 9:10,
Proverbs 30:3, Isaiah 1:4, Isaiah 9:6-7,
Isaiah 10:17, Isaiah 29:23, Isaiah 41:14,
Isaiah 47:4, Isaiah 49:7, Isaiah 61:1, Daniel
9:25-26, Hosea 11:9, Habakkuk 1:12,
Habakkuk 3:3, Mark 1:24, Luke 1:35,
Luke 4:18, Luke 4:34, Luke 24:27, John
6:69, Acts 2:27, Acts 3:14, Acts 4:26-27,
Acts 5:31, Acts 10:38, Hebrews 1, Hebrews
2:1-19, Tobit 12:15.**

**JESUS IS THE KING OF KINGS, LORD
OF LORDS: Deuteronomy 10:17, Psalms
47:2-5, Psalms 89:27, Psalms 110:1, Psalms
136:2-3, Isaiah 9:6-7, Jeremiah 23:5-6,
Jeremiah 30:8-9, Jeremiah 33:14-16,
Ezekiel 34:23-24, Ezekiel 37:24-25, Daniel
2:47, Daniel 7:13-14, Matthew 28:18, Luke
24:27, John 3:35, John 13:3, 1st Corinthians
15:25, Ephesians 1:20-22, Colossians 3:1,
1st Timothy 6:15, Revelations 19:16.
Wisdom 3:8.**

**JESUS IS THE RIGHTEOUS ONE: THE
JUST ONE: Psalms 34:19-21, Psalms 50:6,
Isaiah 9:6-7, Isaiah 59:16-17, Jeremiah
23:5, Zechariah 9:9, Luke 23:47, Luke**

24:27, Acts 3:14, Acts 5:31, Acts 7:52, Acts 22:14, Hebrews 1, Hebrews 2:1-11, 1st John 2:1, 1st John 2:29. Wisdom 2:1`2, Wisdom 2:18, Wisdom 5:1.

JESUS IS THE MIGHTY ONE: Joshua 22:22 Psalm 50:1, Matthew 26:66 Luke 24:27.

JESUS IS THE CORNERSTONE: Isaiah 28:16, Zechariah 10:4, And Ephesians 2:20, 1st Peter 2:6.

JESUS IS THE LEADER OR CHIEF CAPTAIN: Joshua 5:14-15, Psalms 8:5-8, Psalms 47:2, Isaiah 5:4, Daniel 9:5, Micah 5:2, Zechariah 9:9, Matthew 2:6, Luke 24:27, Hebrews 2:10.

JESUS IS THE HIGH PRIEST: Psalms 110:4, Hebrews 3:1, Hebrews 4:14, Hebrews 5:10, Hebrews 9:11, Luke 24:27.

JESUS IS A PROPHET LIKE MOSES: Deuteronomy 18:15-19, Mark 6:15, Luke 24:19, Luke 24:27, John 6:14, Acts 3:22-24.

JESUS IS SHILOH (Messiah or Savior), THE APOSTLE: Genesis 49:10, Exodus 4:13, Matthew 15:24, Luke 4:18, Luke 24:27, John 9:7, John 17:3, John 20:21, Acts 3:22-26, Hebrews 3:1.

JESUS IS THE ENMITY BETWEEN MAN AND SATAN: Genesis 3:15, Luke 24:27.

**JESUS IS THE MEDIATOR,
INTERCESSOR AND ADVOCATE:** Job
33:23, Isaiah 53:12, Isaiah 59:16, Luke
24:27, John 1:39, 1st Timothy 2:5, Hebrews
9:15, 1st John 2:1, Revelations 5:9.

JESUS IS OF THE FAMILY OF SHEM:
Genesis 9:26, Luke 24:27.

**JESUS IS OF THE RACE OF THE
HEBREWS:** John 4:9, John 18:35, Luke
24:27.

JESUS IS OF THE SEED OF ABRAHAM:
Genesis 12:3, Genesis 17:19, Genesis 18:18,
Genesis 22:18, Matthew 1:1-16, John 8:54-
58, Luke 24:27, Acts 3:25, Hebrews 2:16,
Matthew 1:1-16.

JESUS IS OF THE LINE OF ISAAC:
Genesis 17:19, Genesis 21:12-13, Genesis
26:4, Matthew 1:1-16, Romans 9:7,
Galatians 4:23-28, Hebrews 11:18, Luke
24:27.

**JESUS IS OF THE HOUSE OF JACOB
(ISRAEL):** Genesis 28:4-14, Exodus 4:22,
Numbers 24:17, Numbers 24:19, Psalms
135:4, Psalms 135:12, Psalms 135:21,
Isaiah 11:1-16, Isaiah 41:8, Isaiah 49:6,
Jeremiah 14:8, Matthew 1:1-16, Luke 1:68,
Luke 2:30-32, Luke 24:27, Acts 28:20.

**JESUS WILL BE BORN AT
BETHLEHEM, THE CITY OF DAVID:**

**Micah 5:2, Matthew 2:1, Matthew 2:6,
Luke 2:4-7, Luke 24:27, John 7:42, Acts
2:29-30, Acts 13:22-23.**

**JESUS' COMING ANNOUNCED BY AN
ELIJAH LIKE HERALD: Isaiah 40:3-5,
Malachi 3:1, Malachi 4:5, Matthew 3:3,
Matthew 11:10-14, Mark 1:2-3, Luke 3:4-6,
Luke 7:27, Luke 24:27, John 1:23.**

**JESUS' TRIUMPHAL ENTRY INTO
JERUSALEM RIDING ON A DONKEY:
Isaiah 62:11, Zechariah 9:9, And Psalms
118:26, Luke 24:27 Mark 11:9-11, John
12:13-15.**

**JESUS' COMING WOULD OCCASION
THE MASSACRE OF BETHLEHEM'S
CHILDREN: Jeremiah 31:15, Matthew
2:18.
Luke 24:27.**

**JESUS WILL BE A KING OUT OF THE
TRIBE OF JUDAH: Genesis 49:8-11, 1st
Numbers 24:, Numbers 24:17,
Deuteronomy 17:14-20, Chronicles 5:2,
Isaiah 4:2, Isaiah 6:13, Isaiah 11:1, Micah
5:2, Jeremiah 23:5-7, Matthew 1:1-16,
Matthew 2:6, Luke 3:33, Luke 24:27,
Hebrews 7:14, Revelations 5:5.**

**JESUS WILL BE OF THE HOUSE OF
DAVID: 2nd Samuel 7:8-15, 1st Chronicles
17:11-14, 2nd Chronicles 6:42, Psalms 89:3-
4, Psalms 110:1, Psalms 132:10-17, Isaiah
4:2, Isaiah 6:13, Isaiah 9:6-7, Isaiah 11:1,**

Isaiah 16:10-13, Jeremiah 23:5-6, Jeremiah 30:8-9, Jeremiah 33:14-16, Ezekiel 34:23-24, Ezekiel 37:24-25, Amos 9:11, Matthew 1:1-16 Matthew 15:22, Matthew 22:44-45, Mark 12:35-37, Luke 1:32-33, Luke 1:69-70, Luke 2:4, Luke 20:42-44, Luke 24:27, Luke 69:1, John 7:42, Romans 1:3, 2nd Timothy 2:8, Revelations 5:5, Revelations 22:16.

THERE WILL BE A TIME FOR THE BIRTH OF JESUS: Daniel 9:5, Luke 2:1-2, Luke 24:27.

JESUS WILL BE A NAZARENE WOULD LIVE IN GALILEE: Isaiah 9:1-2, Matthew 4:15, Matthew 2:22-23, Matthew 26:71, Luke 24:27, John 1:45. JESUS WILL BE OF THE SEED OF A WOMAN: Genesis 3:15, Micah 5:3, Luke 24:27, 1st Timothy 2:15, Galatians 4:4, Revelations 12:5.

JESUS WILL BE BORN OF A VIRGIN: Isaiah 7:14, Jeremiah 31:22, Micah 5:3, Matthew 1:23, Luke 1: 26-35, Luke 24:27.

JESUS WILL BE CALLED OUT OF EGYPT: Hosea 11:1, Matthew 2:13-17, Luke 24:27.

JESUS WILL BE THE SON OF MAN: Matthew 11:22, Matthew 17:9, Matthew 20:18, Matthew 26:2, Matthew 26:45, Mark 9:12, Luke 11:30, Luke 24:27, John 1:51, John 3:13-14, John 5:27, John 8:28,

**John 12:23, John 12:34, John 13:31,
Revelations 14:14.**

**JESUS WILL BE THE REDEEMER OR
SAVIOR OF MANKIND: Exodus 6:6, Job
19:25-27, Psalms 20:14, Psalms 34:22,
Psalms 78:35, Psalms 98:2, Isaiah 41:14,
Isaiah 42:1-4, Isaiah 44:6, Isaiah 47:4,
Isaiah 53:5, Isaiah 54:8, Isaiah 58:6-9,
Isaiah 59:20, Isaiah 60:1-3, Isaiah 62:11,
Isaiah 63:1, Jeremiah 31:11, Jeremiah
53:34, Malachi 4:1-2, Matthew 1:21,
Matthew 12:18-21, Luke 2:21, Luke 4:18-
19, Luke 24:27, John 1:29, John 3:16, John
12:47, Acts 5:31, Romans 11:26-27, 1st
Timothy 2:6, Titus 2:13, Titus 3:4-7,
Hebrews 5:9, Hebrews 9:15, Hebrews 9: 28,
1st Peter 1:18-19, 1st Peter 3:18, 1st Peter
4:6, Revelations 5:9.**

**JESUS' MINISTRY WOULD BE A
HEALING MINISTRY: Isaiah 53:4,
Matthew 8:17, Luke 24:27.**

**JESUS WOULD HEAL THE BROKEN
HEARTED: Isaiah 61:1-2 Luke 4:18-19,
Luke 24:27.**

**JESUS WOULD TEACH BY PARABLES:
Isaiah 6:9-10, Psalms 78:2, Matthew 4:12,
Matthew 13:13-15, Matthew 13:35, Luke
8:10, Luke 24:27.**

**JESUS WOULD BE DISBELIEVED AND
REJECTED BY RULERS: Psalms 69:4,
Psalms 118:22, Isaiah 6:10, Isaiah 29:13,**

**Isaiah 53:1-4, Matthew 15:8-9, Mark 7:6-7,
Mark 12:10-11, Luke 20:17, Luke 23:13-23,
Luke 24:27, John 1:11, John 12:38-40,
John 15:25.**

**JESUS WOULD BE ACCUSED BY
FALSE WITNESS; SILENT TO THE
ACCUSATIONS; HATED WITHOUT
REASON; SPIT UPON AND SMITTEN:
Psalms 35:11, Isaiah 53:7, Psalms 35:19,
Isaiah 50:6, mark 14:57-58, Mark 15:4-5,
Matthew 26:67, Luke 24:27, John 15:24-26.
Wisdom 5:3, Wisdom 11:14.**

**JESUS WOULD BE BETRAYED FOR
THIRTY (30) PIECES OF SILVER:
Psalms 41:9, Zechariah 11:12-13, Matthew
26:15, Matthew 27:9-10, Luke 22:47-48,
Luke 24:27, John 13:18.**

**JESUS WOULD BE KILLED AND HIS
FOLLOWERS SCATTERED: Zechariah
13:7, Matthew 26:31 Mark 14:27, Luke
24:27.**

**THE SUFFERINGS OF JESUS: Genesis
3:15, 2nd Samuel 7:14-15, Psalms 22:7-8,
Psalms 31, Psalms 89:38-45, Isaiah 49:7,
Isaiah 53:1-12, Daniel 9:26, Zechariah
13:6-8, Luke 24:27, John 1:39, John 19:34-
37, Romans 5:6-8, 1st Peter 2:21-24.**

**JESUS' SIDE PIERCED NO BONES
BROKEN, CAST LOTS FOR AND HIS
GARMENTS DIVIDED: Exodus 12:46,
Numbers 9:12, Psalms 22:16-18, Psalms**

34:20, Isaiah 53:5, Zechariah 12:10, John 19:24, John 19:33-37, John 20:19-27, Matthew 27:35, Luke 24:27.

ON THE CROSS JESUS WOULD BE GIVEN VINEGAR AND GALL: Psalms 69:21, Matthew 27:34, Mark 15:23-26, Luke 23:36, Luke 24:27, John 19:29.

JESUS' DYING WORDS: Psalms 22:1, Psalms 31:5, Matthew 27:46, Mark 15:34, Luke 23:46, Luke 24:27.

JESUS WOULD DIE WITH MALEFACTORS, ASSIGNED A GRAVE WITH THE WICKED, BURIED BY A RICH MAN: Isaiah 53:9-12, Matthew 27:57-60, Mark 15:27-28, Luke 23:37, Luke 24:27.

THE DEATH OF JESUS ON THE CROSS: Genesis 3:15, Deuteronomy 21:22-23, Psalms 22:16-18, Isaiah 53:8-9, Daniel 9:25, Matthew 20:19, Matthew 26:2, Matthew 27:35, Luke 24:7, Luke 24:27, John 19:16-23, Acts 8:33, 1st Corinthians 15:3-4, Philippians 2:8, Colossians 2:14, 1st Peter 2:21, Wisdom 2:20, Wisdom 5:3.

JESUS' ENTOMBMENT AND EMBALLMENT: Isaiah 53:9, Matthew 12:40, Matthew 26:12, Mark 14:8, Luke 24:27, John 12:7, John 19:40-41, 1st Corinthians 15:3-4.

JESUS' RESURRECTION ON THE THIRD DAY: Psalms 11:17, Psalms 16:10, Psalms 17:15, Psalms 49:15, Isaiah 53:11, Matthew 12:40, Matthew 16:4, Matthew 17:9, Matthew 20:19, Matthew 26:31, Mark 16: 6-7, Luke 24:27, John 2:19, John 3:14, John 3:22, John 8:28, John 12:32-34, John 20:1-19, Acts 2:27-32, Acts 3:15, Acts 3:22, Acts 13:34-37, Acts 17:31-32, Romans 1:3-4, 1st Corinthians 15:3-4, 1st Corinthians 15:12&20, Colossians 1:18 Colossians 3:1, 2nd Timothy 2:8, Revelations 12:5.

JESUS' ASCENSION INTO HEAVEN: Psalms 47:5, Psalms 68:18, Psalms 110:1, Mark 16:19, Luke 24:27, John 20:17, Acts 1:9, Acts 3:32-35, 1st Corinthians 15:4, Ephesians 4:7-10, Hebrews 1:3, Hebrews 1:13, Revelations 11:5, Revelations 12:5.

JESUS' REJECTION AND DEATH WOULD BE FOLLOWED BY DESTRUCTION OF THE TEMPLE AND GREAT TRIBULATION: Daniel 9:27, Daniel 11:31, Daniel 12:1-11, Matthew 24:15, Mark 13:14, Luke 21:20, Luke 24:27.

SECOND ADVENT OF JESUS (2nd coming of Christ): Job 19:25-29, Psalms 50:1-6, Isaiah 40:10, Isaiah 62:11, Jeremiah 23:5-8, Matthew 24:3-30, Matthew 25:31-34, Matthew 26:64, Luke 24:27, John 5:25-30, Acts 17:31, Acts 24:25, Hebrews 9:28,

**Revelations 1:4, Revelations 14:14-15,
Revelations 19:11-17.**

JESUS WILL BE THE SUPREME

**JUDGE: Genesis 18:25, Judges 11:27, 1st
Samuel 2:10, Psalms 26:1, Psalms 35:24,
Psalms 72:1-2, Isaiah 11:1-16, Sirach
35:15-17, Sirach 35:20-22, Luke 19:22,
Luke 24:27, John 5:22&30, John 8:15,
John 12:47, Acts 17:31, Romans 2:16, 1st
Corinthians 14:4, 1st Corinthians 14:24, 2nd
Timothy 4:1, 2nd Timothy 4:6-8, Hebrews
10:30, Hebrews 13:4, James 4:12, 1st Peter
4:6, Revelations 19:11, Revelations 20:12.
Wisdom 2:16.**

May all glory be to God:

Bibliography: Books Cited and/or Read:

A father Who Keeps His Promises: Servant Books:
Scott Hahn, Ph.d.
Angels: The National Gallery: Erika Langmuir.
Angels: World Publishing: Billy Graham.
Angels Among Us: Pacific Press Publishing: E. Lonnie
Melashenko, Brian Jones.
A History of the Jews: 5th Edition Abram Leon Sachar.
A History of the Jewish People: Max L. Margolis and
Alexander Marx.
A History of the Ancient World: Chester G. Starr,
Professor of Ancient History, University of Illinois,
New York Oxford University Press.
A Survey of the Old Testament: Zondervan Publishing
House: Andrew E. Hill & John H. Walton.
A History of the World's Religions; Ninth Edition;
Macmillan Publishing Company; David S. Noss &
John B. Noss.
Book of Jashar: 1840 Translation by J. H. Perry.

Buddhism: George Braziller: Edited by Richard A. Gard.
 Catechism of The Catholic Church: An Image Book: Double Day: With Modifications from the Editio Typica.
 Catholicism: George Braziller: Edited by George Brantl.
 Caesar and Christ: Simon and Schuster: Will Durant.
 Caesar's Coin revisited: Ethics and Public policy Center; Michael Cromartie.
 Christ among Us: A Modern Presentation of the Catholic faith; New York Press: Anthony J. Wilhelm.
 Crossing Over: Princess Books: John Edwards.
 Confessions of a MEGA CHURCH PASTOR: Beacon Publishing; Allen Hunt.
 Concise Bible Encyclopedia: A to Z fact-finder: William B. Eerdmans Publishing Company.
 Cosmic Conflict: Good and Evil Wage War for Planet Earth: Pacific Press Publishing Association: E.G. White.
 Eastern Religions: Coogan Books: D. Michael.
 Fall of Jerusalem and Roman Conquest of Judea: T. Nelson and Sons: Dean Milman.
 Final Conflict between Truth and Error: Hope International: Ellen G. White.
 For a complete list of generally accepted historical facts about this Jesus of Nazareth please reference Leslie E. Milton's Jesus: The Fact behind the Faith and James M. Robinson's A New Quest of the Historical Jesus.
 God among Men: Fides Publishers Association: translated and Edited by Berbard Murchland C.S.C.
 God is not Great, How Religion Poisons Everything: McClelland & Stewart: Christopher Hitchens.
 Great Religions of the World: National Geographic Society.
 Great Religions of the World: Saint Mary's Press: Christian Brothers Publication: Sr. Loretta Pastva, SND
 With Stephan Nagel and Carl Koch, FSC.
 Heaven the Mystery of Angels: frontier Research Publishing Inc: Grant R. Jeffrey.

Here I Stand: A life of Martin Luther: A Mentor Book:
 Roland H. Bainton.
 He's Alive: Volume 11: Edited by Father Peter B.
 Coughlin.
 History of Israel; from the Second Temple to the
 Present Time: The Jordan Publishing Co.: Sulamith
 Ish-Kishor.
 Harper's Bible Commentary: James L. Mays, General
 Editor.
 Heaven is for real: Thomas Nelson; Todd Burpo.
 Heaven the mystery of Angles: Frontier Publications
 Inc: Grant R. Jeffery.
 Hinduism: George Braziller: Edited by Louis Renou.
 Hurlburt's Story of the Bible: The John C. Winston
 Company: Dr. Jesse Lyman Hurlbut.
 In the Shadow of the Prophet: The Struggle for the
 Soul of Islam: Milton Viorst.
 Infidel: Ayaan Hirsi Ali: Free Press.
 In His Steps: Honor Books; Charles Sheldon.
 Illustrated Guide to the Bible: J.R. Porter: DBP.
 Indian and Far Eastern Religious Traditions: Harper
 and Row Publishers: Robert D. Baird & Alfred Bloom
 Inside Jerusalem City of Destiny: Regal Books: Arnold
 Olson.
 In The Footsteps of Jesus: Nateev Publishing
 Steimatzy's Agency: Wolfgang E. Pax.
 In the Footsteps of Moses: Nateev Publishing: Moshe
 Pearlman.
 Islam: George Braziller: Edited by: John A. Williams.
 Japanese Religion: Unity and Diversity, Third Edition:
 H. Wadsworth Publishing Company: Byron Earhart.
 Jesus an Historian's Review of The Gospels: Charles
 Scribner's Sons: Michael Grant.
 Jesus before Christianity: Orbis Books: Albert Nolan.
 Jews God and History: Signet Books: Max I. Dimont.
 Judaism: George Braziller: Edited by: Arthur Hertberg
 Just As I Am: Harper Collins Publishing: Billy
 Graham.
 Life after Life: Raymond A. Moody Jr. M.D. Batam
 Books.
 Luther's Small Catechism: Faith and Fellowship Press;

Mysteries of the Bible: The Readers Digest: The source documents, contributors and contributing editors of this volume total into the hundreds.
 National Geographic December 2008: National Geographic Society, Washington D.C.
 Nomad: Ayaan Hirsi Ali.
 Old Testament Survey: The Message, Form and Background of the Old Testament: William Sanford la Sor, David Allan Hubbard and Frederic William Bush: William B. Eerdmans Publishing Company.
 Pathways through Jewish History: Ruth Samuels.
 Peace with God: Pocket Books: Billy Graham.
 Protestantism: George Braziller: Edited by: J. Leslie Dunstan.
 References World Religions and 101 Cult Sects: J. Dominquez M.D.
 Rediscover Catholicism: Matthew Kelly: Beacon Publishing.
 Religions of Asia, Second Edition: John Y. Fenton, Emory University; Norvin Hein, Yale University; Frank E. Reynolds, The University of Chicago; Alan L. Miller, Miami University, Ohio and Niels C Nielson, Jr. Rice University St. Martens Press/New York.
 Stolen Innocence: Harper Books: Harper: The Elissa Wall Story with Lisa Parker:
 The Ancient and Medieval World: Rogers, Adams and Brown.
 The Ancient near East: Princeton University Press: Edited by James B. Pritchard.
 The Battle for Peace: Bantam Books: Ezer Weizman: Former Minister of Defense of the state of Israel.
 The Bible as History: Barnes and Noble: Werner Keller.
 The Book of Enoch: Translated by Richard Laurence.
 The boy who came back from Heaven: Tyndale House Publishers Inc.: Kevin & Alex Malarkey.
 The Catechetical Documents: A Parish Resource: Liturgy Training Publications.
 The Columbia Illustrated Encyclopedia.
 The Drama of the Lost Disciples: Covenant: George F. Jowett.
 The Grand Design: Bantam Books: Stephen Hawkin and Leonard Mlodinow.

The Gift of Angels: Zondervan:
 The Gift of the Jews: Doubleday; Thomas Cahill.⁴
 The Great Doctrines of the Bible: Moody Press:
 William Evans.
 The Gospel According to Jesus: Academie Books; John
 F. MacArthur Jr.
 The Holy Land, One Land, Three Religions: Sami
 Awwad.
 The Jewish People: Deborah Pessin: United Synagogue
 of America.
 The Qur'an: Arabic to English translation by Adullah
 Yusufali.
 The Qur'an: Arabic to English translation by Al
 Buhkari.
 The Qur'an: Arabic to English translation by Shakir.
 The Legend of The Wandering Jew: A Mentor Book:
 Joseph Gaer.
 The Lion Encyclopedia of the Bible: A Lion Book,
 Published by the Readers Digest, Inc. Consulting
 Editors John W. Drane MA PhD, David Field BA. Alan
 Millard MA, Mphil, PSA and Pat Alexander BA
 Organizing Editor.
 The Meaning of the Dead Sea Scrolls: A Signet Key
 Book; A. Powell Davies.
 The Missing Books of the Bible: Volume 1: Halo
 Press.
 The Missing Books of the Bible: Volume 11: Media
 Solution Services.
 The New International Bible, The North American
 Bible, The King James Version.
 The New Penguin History of the World: J. M. Roberts.
 University of Iowa and Alfred Bloom University of
 Hawaii, Harper and Row, Publishers.
 The Old Testament Speaks: Harper: Samuel J. Schultz.
 The People and The Promise: Augsburg Publishing
 House: Laurence N. Field.
 The Revelation of John Volume 1: William Barclay:
 The Westminster Press.
 The Revelation of John Volume 2: William Barclay:
 The Westminster Press.
 The Riddle of the New Testament: Sir Edwyn Hoskyns
 and Noel Davey: Faber paper covered Editions.

The Search for the Tomb of Jesus: Acclaimed Books:
William Steuart McBirnie.
Themes of Theology: God Among Men: Fides
Publishing Association: Bernard Murchland.
There is a New World Coming: Bantam Books: Hal
Lindsey.
The Signature of God; Grant R. Jeffery: Frontier
Research Publications, Inc. 1996.
The Timechart of Biblical History: TMP.
The Wisdom of Evolution: A Mentor-Omega Book:
Raymond J. Nogar.
The World's Great Religions: Life: Time Incorporated:
New York.
The Universe and Dr. Einstein: A Mentor Book:
Lincoln Barnett.
The Year of Living Biblically: Simeon & Schuster: A.
J. Jacob.
Walking the Bible: A Journey By Land, Through the
five books of Moses: Harper Perennial: Bruce Feiler.
What the Bible is all About: Regal Books: Henrietta C.
Mears.
Witness to Hope: The Biography of Pope John Paul 11:
Cliff Street Books: George Weigel.

